DUKE
UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY

FRIENDS OF
DUKE UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY

GIFT OF

Glenn R. Negley

G Van^dr Gucht Inv. et Sculp.

THE
TRAVELS
AND
ADVENTURES
OF
JAMES MASSEY.

Tranſlated from the FRENCH.

LONDON:

Printed for JOHN WATTS, at the Printing-Office in *Wild-Court* near *Lincoln's-Inn Fields.*

MDCCXXXIII.

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2010 with funding from
Duke University Libraries

http://www.archive.org/details/travelsadventure00tyss

UTOPIA
RBR
T994T

TO

JEREMIAH DUMMER, Esq;

SIR,

THE Recommendation these Travels have been favour'd with from yourself and other good Judges, as a History admirably adapted both to the Entertainment and Instruction of the Reader; and your Commands upon me to translate it, lay me under the strongest Inducement to claim your Patronage.

And I humbly conceive that your Retirement from that AGENCY, during which you perform'd ſo many National Services in cultivating a mutual good Underſtanding and Commerce between *Old* and *New England*, as juſtly gain'd you the Love and Applauſe of thoſe who truly underſtand the Intereſts of both People, gives you the more Leiſure to receive a Dedication.

It muſt be own'd that bright Accompliſhments, acquir'd and improv'd in *European*, as well as *American* Univerſities; The Elegance of your Taſte, both in Men and Books; The Politeneſs of your Converſation; Your Eſteem for the Sciences, which are ſo delicately interwoven in the following Narrative;

tive; Your Knowledge in the *Belles Lettres*; Your long Acquaintance with the *Beau Monde*; And, what is equal to all, Your generous Diſpoſition to do Good to Mankind, are Qualities which would have continued you very uſeful and ornamental in a Public Station.

Yet I take Leave to congratulate you on your Preference of a private Life; ſince not only an innate Principle of Honour, but an eaſy Fortune, ſet you above the Temptation of ſoliciting Employments, and ſubjecting yourſelf to Dependencies which often prove Snares to the beſt of Men, by cauſing them to deviate from the ſacred Paths of Truth and Juſtice. This probably was the Reaſon you lately declin'd acting as an *Inſpector*

tor of a GREAT COMPANY'S Affairs, an Office of no little Truſt and Confidence, and to which you was unanimouſly elected by the *General Court*.

I heartily wiſh you Health and long Life for the Pleaſure and Profit of all your Friends, and eſpecially of,

SIR,

Your moſt obedient

October 11, 1732.

humble Servant,

STEPHEN WHATLEY.

The *French* EDITOR's

LETTER,

To *M****

SIR,

THESE are the TRAVELS *you heard so much talk of, and was so desirous to see. By what Chance the Manuscript fell into my Hands, I will let you know another time: As soon as I had dipp'd into it, I could not help reading it from the Beginning to the End, and found so many curious and important Passages in it, and so many instructive Dissertations on several Points of Philosophy, as gave me abundant Satisfaction. Many of my Friends, Men of excellent Sense and Learning, have express'd equal Approbation of it, so that I dare say,* Sir, *you will read it with the same Pleasure.*

I own

I own to you that at the first Reading I suspected the Author had taken a Traveller's Privilege of mixing a little Romance in his Relation; but when I perus'd it again, and consider'd it a little more particularly, I found nothing in it but what was very natural, and highly probable. And that Air of Candour and Simplicity we meet with every where in the honest old Gentleman the Author, has fully convinc'd me.

There are Passages indeed, in certain Conversations upon Points of Religion, which, at first, a little shock'd me, but upon a closer Examination, and finding that the Author, who always was a great Champion for his own Religion, has generally expos'd their Weakness or Falshood, I thought there was nothing in it that could startle a Man well instructed in the Christian Faith, which, God be prais'd, is too well establish'd to fear any thing from the Attacks of Libertines or Infidels: Consequently, we have no need to have recourse to mean Artifices for concealing the Force of the Arguments made use of against us, as if we had a bad Cause to defend.

I am, *&c.*

THE
CONTENTS.

CHAP. I. *OF our Author's particular Studies and Profession; with an Account of his Embarking, and his first Shipwreck on the Coast of* Spain. Page 1

CHAP. II. *The Author's Stay at* Lisbon, &c. 14

CHAP. III. *Of the Author's Second Voyage; and his Shipwreck upon an unknown Coast.* 35

CHAP. IV. *The Author, with only two Comrades, leaves the rest of the Company, and penetrates into those unknown Countries. The Obstacles he meets with in his Passage,* &c. 41

CHAP. V. *Continuation of the Adventures of the Author and his Comrades, till they came to an Inhabited Country.* 51

CHAP. VI. *Of the Discovery of a very fine Country, its Inhabitants, their Language, Manners and Customs,* &c. *and of the Esteem which our Author and his Comrades gain'd there.* 72

CHAP. VII. *A curious Conversation between the Author, the Judge, and the Priest of the Village concerning Religion.* 100

CHAP. VIII. *The Author is carry'd to the King's Court. He traces the Origin of those Monarchs; describes the Royal Palace, Temple,* &c. 125

CHAP. IX. *Which contains several very curious Conversations betwixt the King and our Author.* 137

CHAP.

CHAP. X. *Containing the Ceremonies at the Births and Burials in this Country, the manner of administring Justice, and many other Remarkables.* 153

CHAP. XI. *More Adventures of the Author, and his Comrade, till their Departure from Court.* 173

CHAP. XII. *The Author leaves this fine Country; the Ways he contriv'd to get out of it. He meets again on the Sea-Side with some of the Ship's Company with whom he had formerly been cast away upon the Coast,* &c. 204

CHAP. XIII. *Containing what happen'd to the Residue of the Ship's Company, during the Author's Absence; and the rest of their Adventures 'till their Departure from this Country.* 222

CHAP. XIV. *The Author's Passage from the Southern Countries to* Goa, *where he was imprison'd by the Inquisition. The Story of a* Chinese *whom he met with there, and the Manner how they got their Liberty.* 248

CHAP. XV. *Of the Author's Departure for* Lisbon: *How he was taken and carry'd into Slavery, and what happened to him while he was a Slave.* 275

CHAP. XVI. *Continuation of the Adventures of* Peter Hudde *who is mention'd in the second Chapter; and the Author's Arrival at* London. 301

THE

THE

Travels *and* Adventures

OF

JAMES MASSEY.

CHAP. I.

Of our Author's particular Studies and Profession; with an Account of his Embarking, and his first Shipwreck on the Coast of Spain.

THE narrow Limits with which the Life of Man is circumscrib'd, and the few Years he is capable of employing in cultivating and perfecting the Arts and Sciences, glide away so soon, that no wonder if the Progress he makes in either, turns to very little Account. Nor is the Shortness of Life the only Obstacle which thwarts our natural Desire of Universal

Knowledge; the Loſs of Worldly Goods being another Bar equally inſurmountable, the Truth of which I learnt, to my Coſt, long before I had finiſh'd my Studies.

THE Inclination I had from my Cradle to the *Belles Lettres*, to Antiquity, and to the ſtrange Rarities I ſaw brought home from foreign Parts, made my Father reſolve to put me early to School, where I was ſuch an apt Scholar that my Diligence and Memory got me the Prize in all the Claſſes. The fine things my Maſters ſaid in my Praiſe, and the Tenderneſs with which my Parents lov'd me, redoubled my Emulation, inſomuch that I gave my ſelf no Reſpite, and had made ſo good uſe of my Time that when I was but eighteen Years old, I underſtood both *Latin* and *Greek*, very well. In ſhort, I had gone thro' a Courſe of Philoſophy, and was far advanc'd in the Mathematics, when my Father *David Maſſey*, who was Captain of a Ship, had the Misfortune to be blown up with his Veſſel by the Imprudence of a Sailor, who inadvertently ſet fire to the Powder.

THIS fatal Blow happen'd to our Family in 1639, and of all the Days in the Year, upon that very Day that our Army was beat by the *Spaniards* before *Thionville*; you muſt know that the good Man was bound to the Factory at *Senegal*, and as the greateſt Part of the Lading was upon his own Account, my Mother was on a ſudden left a Widow with five Children, and ſcarce any thing to maintain them. This Calamity however was ſo far from breaking her Heart, that as ſoon as ſhe receiv'd the News of it, ſhe ſent for us, and ſaid to us with a manly Air: 'Children, one of the

'worſt

'worſt Misfortunes has happen'd to you that could 'fall out in humane Life: One fatal Moment 'has not only robb'd me of my dear Husband, 'but you of your Father, and all your For-'tunes. Nevertheleſs, be not caſt down, for the 'Divine Providence can work Miracles to ſup-'port his Creatures. Learn by this Fatality, 'not to place your Truſt in the Arm of Fleſh; 'and be aſſur'd that God is a gracious Being, who 'will not abandon you. Since I have not ſuffi-'cient Means left to bring you all up as we had 'intended, conſider what Profeſſions each of you 'is moſt inclin'd to follow. For your part, '*James*, ſaid ſhe, I think you had beſt be a Sur-'geon, which, ſince you ſeem to be fond of Tra-'velling, like your Father, is an Art that will fa-'vour your Deſign.' She likewiſe propos'd to the biggeſt Children what Profeſſions they ſhould undertake; to which every one of them conſented with Tears, and apply'd with Succeſs.

MY Mother, who was a Native of *Hedin*, where ſhe had Relations ſtill living, left *Abbeville*, and went thither to ſettle. To my very great Joy, tho' contrary to my Expectation, I found many People there who were ſincerely concern'd for her Misfortune. One of her Brothers took one of the Children off of her Hands; a Father-in-law took another; and twenty People promis'd her that they would never let her want. Nay, ſome would fain have perſuaded me to alter my Purpoſe, and purſue my Studies, in hopes that in time I might have it in my Power to bring up the innocent Children, who were not able to help

themſelves; but my Reſolution was form'd, and my Inclination fix'd.

I TOOK Leave of my Family and my deareſt Acquaintance, who were ſorry to part with me, and ſet out for *Paris*. The Grandeur, Magnificence, and Variety, together with the vaſt Concourſe of People of all Ranks, which I ſaw on my Arrival at this fine Place, did at the firſt Daſh aſtoniſh me; every thing that occur'd to my View, ſeem'd perfectly new to me; I thought my ſelf in another World; and M. *Rouſſeau*, the Surgeon, to whoſe Tuition I had been recommended, had enough to do for near a Fortnight to anſwer the Queſtions I was continually putting to him, to gratify my Curioſity. He likewiſe did me the Favour to carry me to *Marli*, *Fontainbleau*, *St. Dennis*, *St. Germain*, the *Louvre*, the *Tuilleries*, and many other Places, which are the Admiration of Foreigners. But as the Value of Things is enhanc'd by their Rarity, and diminiſh'd by their Frequency, I accuſtom'd my ſelf at laſt to look upon all theſe Fineries with a ſort of Indifference, which by degrees turn'd to an Averſion; ſo that I abandon'd all thoſe Curioſities to the Speculation of the Idle and the Indolent, and began to apply my ſelf carefully to the Art I had purpos'd to ſtudy. M. *Rouſſeau* had very good Buſineſs, and great Experience, and the many Cures he perform'd, open'd new Diſcoveries to me every Day.

YET for all this, ſcarce a Day paſs'd but I exercis'd my ſelf ſeveral Hours in thoſe Languages and Sciences, in which I had before ſpent all my Time.

Time. I was the more encourag'd to do ſo, becauſe Philoſophy and the Mathematics ſeem'd to be much in vogue, by the Application of all Gentlemen to them, of what Age and Rank ſoever. At the ſame time there came out a Treatiſe of Conic Sections, ſaid to be written by the Son of M. *Paſcal*, the Intendant of Juſtice at *Roan*, at which, many Perſons of Learning were really ſurpris'd. I had the Curioſity to run it over, but I found things in it which I thought above the Reach of a Lad of Sixteen Years of Age, for in ſeveral Places it ſurpaſs'd *Apollonius*. Many People were of my Opinion, eſpecially when they conſider'd, that the Father of this pretended young Author was a thorough Proficient in this Science, from whence the Generality imagin'd, that he had a mind to give the Son the Credit of it, to uſher him into the World with the better Grace. Be this as it will, 'tis certain that the Junior *Paſcal* was a Man of a lively Imagination, and a great deal of Penetration and Judgment, as it afterwards fully appear'd. M. *Morin*, whom I took the Liberty to apply to, and who receiv'd me with extraordinary Civility, procur'd me alſo the Acquaintance of M. *Des Argues*, M. *Midorge*, and ſeveral other Mathematicians, who ſav'd me a great deal of Labour by the curious MSS. they put into my Hands, and the clear and conciſe Methods they were pleas'd to make me acquainted with. By means of theſe learned Perſonages, I had Acceſs likewiſe to the Reverend Father *Mercenne*. This ingenious Gentleman was a great Help to me for the underſtanding of ſeveral Queſtions in Natural Philoſophy, and the Meta-

phyſics. As he was intimate with M. *Deſcartes*, who was then in *Holland*, I propos'd nothing of Difficulty to him, but he explain'd to me at one time or other; and he was the firſt Man that ever put into my Hand the Six Meditations of that celebrated Philoſopher. I was ſo deſirous of learning how to demonſtrate the Exiſtence of a God, the Immateriality of the Soul, and its real Diſtinction from the Body, that I read them with all the Attention I was capable of; but I frankly own that I was not ſatisfy'd with them. His Method for the due conducting of Reaſon, and finding out the Truth in the Sciences, his Dioptricks, his Meteors, his Theory of the World, and every thing in general that I had ſeen of his, charm'd me; but for his Metaphyſics, as I ſaid before, I lik'd no Part of 'em, but the Subtilty of his Arguments. This made me conclude, that we ought never to wade above the Depth of our ſhallow Underſtandings, and that we ſhould confine our ſelves to Bodies, to explain their Nature, Form, Number, Properties, the Alterations occaſion'd by Motion, and what may be moſt remarkable in them for our own Uſe, for the Good of Society, and for the Underſtanding and Advancement of Humane Knowledge, without pretending to make manifeſt and viſible, as it were, to the naked Eye, ſuch things as are in their own Nature *Arcana's*, and are, in all Probability, deſign'd to be for ever the Objects of our Faith and Admiration. It appear'd in a very little while, that I was not the only Perſon of that Opinion; for an anonymous Book was publiſh'd at the *Hague*, by an unknown Author, with a View to explode

explode the Philoſophy of *Deſcartes:* At the ſame time Father *Bourdin* attack'd it in his public *Theſes*; and then came out the Objections of Meſſieurs *Hobbes*, *Gaſſendi*, *Arnaud*, and others, to his Metaphyſics. I was ſo taken with that Author, that I was curious to ſee all his Diſputes, which coſt me ſo much Time, that my Maſter often reproach'd me for it, and ſaid that I neglected the main Point, for the ſake of applying to things which cou'd be of no great Uſe to me, and which, as to ſeveral of them, were not univerſally approv'd of. He even went ſo far as to tell me one Day, that I was in the high Road to Atheiſm, for that I had already embrac'd an Opinion which had been lately condemn'd by the Tribunal of the *Inquiſition*, in the Perſon of *Galileo*, whom they had confin'd in the Priſons of the *Holy Office*, after having caus'd his Treatiſe of the *Circular Motion of the Earth*, according to the Principles of *Copernicus*, to be burnt by the common Hangman. But leſt theſe Reproaches might entirely diſcourage me, he took care to ſeaſon them with Commendations of my conſiderable Talents for Surgery, and the Knowledge I had acquir'd in it, notwithſtanding the Time I devoted to other Occupations.

AT length, when he found that all he could ſay did not put me out of conceit with thoſe fine Sciences, he reſolv'd to enter me into the State of Matrimony. He talk'd to me inceſſantly of a very pretty Niece of his, who, after her Mother's Death, would have a conſiderable Eſtate. He often gave me to underſtand, that he ſhou'd not be ſorry if I was marry'd to her; and that as he was

advanc'd in Years, it would be in his Power to put me into the intire Poſſeſſion of his Shop, which was well accuſtom'd: But this was not the Mark I aim'd at. When he perceiv'd my Indifference, he became more cold to me than before, inſomuch that he began to neglect me, and to conceal ſeveral things from me, which I could not well learn without him; ſo that after having ſerv'd two Years Apprenticeſhip, I went to *Diep*, where I ſtay'd one Year more with M. *La Croix*, who was without Diſpute a very able Maſter.

I will not ſtop here to relate the minute Adventures which I had in both thoſe Towns, becauſe I think them too inconſiderable; but I cannot paſs over in Silence, that while I was at this Port, a Man arriv'd there whom the Vulgar call'd, *The Wand'ring Jew*. My Maſter, who was a curious Man, and very courteous, after having talk'd with him ſeveral times occaſionally, invited him to Dinner one Day, that he might have the Opportunity of hearing him diſcourſe. The firſt Thing he told us was, That he was Cotemporary with Jeſus Chriſt, and that he ſaw him crucify'd. My Name, ſaid he, is *Michob*, and I was one of *Pontius Pilate*'s Domeſtics. When that *Roman* Judge pronounc'd Sentence againſt Jeſus, I ſtept up to this pretended Criminal (continued he) and ſaid to him, *What makes you ſtay here ſo long? Han't you heard your Condemnation? Get off! Why do you delay?* To which the Holy Man reply'd to me, *I'll be gone; but you ſhall ſtay till I return.* 'This is now above 1600 Years ago '(ſaid he) which I hope is the greateſt Part of 'the Time that I am to wander upon the Earth.

'Moſt

'Moſt People are fond of Life, and few there are 'but wou'd be glad to add an Age to the Years 'they have liv'd already, if it were in their Power, 'but for my own part, I wiſh with all my Heart 'I had dy'd a thouſand Years ago.' As the Droll talk'd all manner of Languages, had by conſequence a happy Memory, and had been a Traveller all his Life-time, it was a Pleaſure to hear him relate a thouſand Stories, as clear and evident Truths, which paſt Ages have tranſmitted to us in a very confuſed Light, and after a very uncertain manner. There is no Corner of the World but he affirm'd he had viſited. He nam'd ſeveral Kingdoms and Republics to us, that lie about the two Poles, which we had never heard the mention of. All the Courts in the World were known to him. He was not ignorant of the minuteſt Circumſtance of the moſt remarkable Revolutions of Empires, ſince he came into the World. In ſhort, the remoteſt Incidents ſeem'd to him as recent as if they had juſt happen'd. But the Paſſage at which we all prick'd up our Ears, was where he began to entertain us with an Account of the Saints that roſe again at the Crucifixion of Jeſus Chriſt. All *Jeruſalem*, ſaid he, was alarm'd when it was reported that the People at the Burial-Places had ſeen the Earth move in ſeveral Parts, the Graves open of themſelves, and naked Bodies appear, and make a thouſand different Motions. The Spectators, continued he, were ſo aſtoniſh'd at this unexpected Sight, that they all trembled, and ſeveral dy'd with Fear. The moſt daring of them were willing, however, to ſee the Iſſue of it, and they were wonder-

fully ſurpris'd when, by and by, they ſaw Humane Creatures ſtart all at once out of their Graves, and preſs in a Hurry thro' the Multitude, who made way for them by tumbling to the Ground, as if they were all going to take Poſſeſſion of their Sepulchres. No one cou'd diſcern, added *Michob*, was he ever ſo attentive, of what Sex the riſen Bodies were, for they ſeem'd to be all of the ſame Bigneſs, the ſame Age, and Complexion, and had no viſible Mark by which they cou'd be diſtinguiſh'd from one another. They had not a Hair upon all their Bodies; their Bellies were flat, and ſeem'd as if they ſtuck to their Ribs; ſeveral held their Mouths open, but there were no Teeth to be ſeen; and their round and ſmooth Fingers ſeem'd to be intirely bare of Nails. This made him conclude, that all the Excremental Parts, and thoſe which ſerve to grind, to ſwallow and digeſt Food while we are in a State of Mortality, will not accompany us to the other World, where, in ſhort, they would be uſeleſs. In fine, according to his Diſcourſe, it was never poſitively known what became of thoſe Perſons; but it was reported ſome Days after, that they were gone to *Galilee*, where they were to confer with Jeſus Chriſt, and from thence to be carry'd to the Manſion of the Bleſſed. It may well be ſuppos'd that this curious Subject did not fail to occaſion a tedious Converſation: 'Twas Midnight when our Gueſt left us, tho' my Maſter, notwithſtanding the Converſation he had had with him elſewhere, wou'd fain have kept him till next Day. As the Magiſtrates look'd upon him to be a Viſionary, they did not much mind what he

ſaid,

ſaid, conſequently he was not a dangerous Perſon, and ask'd no favour of any Body; for the common People, and abundance of credulous and ſuperſtitious Goſſips, who thought him a Prodigy, gave him what Neceſſaries he wanted; beſides that he ſtay'd but a little while in a Place, and was no more than a Wanderer up and down in the World.

HIS Departure, added to all the fine Things I had heard him ſay of Foreign Countries, very much whetted my natural Deſire to travel. I imparted my Deſign to M. *La Croix*, and as he had already been ſo good as to watch all Opportunities of publiſhing the Progreſs I had made in my Profeſſion, it was not at all difficult for me to enter my ſelf as a Surgeon on Board the Ship of Captain *Le Sage*, then preparing for a Voyage to *Martinico*. We ſail'd therefore from *Diep* the 21ſt of *May*, 1643. Our Ship carry'd but four Guns, and the Crew conſiſted but of Fifty two Perſons. Tho' the Captain was a *Huguenot*, yet he was a perfect honeſt Man, ſtrictly juſt, and extremely devout. He wou'd not ſuffer a Day to paſs over his Head without Publick Prayers on Board, every Morning and Evening, which were perform'd with great Zeal and Edification by *Peter du Queſne*, a young Student in Divinity, with whom, I can truly ſay, for my own part, I was ſo affected, that I immediately conceiv'd an Eſteem for him, and that I had not been in his Company a Fortnight, but the Veneration, which the Monks had impreſs'd me with for the holy Men and Women in Paradiſe, was very much abated; but as ill Luck would have it, the Benefit I receiv'd from the whol-

wholsom Lectures of this agreeable Companion, was of no long Duration.

TWENTY-SEVEN Days after our Departure, when we were off of *Cape Finisterre*, we perceiv'd that our Ship took in much more Water than ordinary. The Carpenters, who were never idle, were as diligent as possible to find out the Cause of this Disaster; but notwithstanding all their Care, and the plying of the Pumps Day and Night, they were never the nearer, and at the end of Thirty-six Hours the Water was risen to such a Height, that it run out at the Port-Holes. The Captain seeing there was no Remedy, order'd us to put to Sea in the two Long-Boats, without taking any thing with us but our Money, of which we had not much. M. *Le Sage* was still on Board, with the Master, the Pilots, and four other young Gentlemen, who were only making a Voyage of Pleasure, when the Ship sunk to the bottom like a Stone. Tho' they were prepar'd for the Event, yet they were intangled in one another; but as we were at hand, we gave them all the Assistance in our Power, and had only the Misfortune to lose one of those four Lads, *Colombier*, a young Gentleman of *Picardy*, who was scarce Fifteen Years of Age.

WE were oblig'd to be as easy as possible under our Loss, and to consider what Course to steer next; for tho' we had try'd to make to Land for above two Days, yet the Wind, which was at S. E. hinder'd us. The most mortifying Circumstance of all was, that thro' a Misconstruction of the Captain's Meaning, and for want of Time to supply our selves, we had very little Provision,

and

and no Compaſs to guide us. The Sky was ſerene, the Sea calm, and the Weather agreeable; but every one dreaded a Change. Mean time, with the Light of the Sun by Day, and of the Stars by Night, we us'd the utmoſt Diligence to get aſhore, but cou'd not obſerve that we made any conſiderable Advance; ſo that we began to deſpair of our Lives, eſpecially upon the third Day, when there fell ſo thick a Fog, that it was impoſſible to ſee the Diſtance of two Foot. At this very time, the little Long-Boat ſeparated from ours, which the Captain perceiving by the Cries we made to one another, preſs'd the feeble Rowers to ſtrain hard to rejoin us, which they did indeed, with a Vengeance; for falling foul upon our little Veſſel, thoſe on Board us were ſo alarm'd, that they all roſe up at once, and gave ſuch a Shock to theirs, that it turn'd Keel upwards. We had a great deal of Difficulty to ſave them, and much more to make room for them; for we all lay one upon another, and had not eat any thing for above Forty Eight Hours.

IN ſhort, it pleaſed God that about Noon, when the Sun had diſpers'd the Fog, we diſcover'd ſeveral Sail coming towards us, which agreeable Sight gave us Joy inexpreſſible. We tack'd about immediately to meet them, and in three or four Hours time they came up with us, when Captain *Davidſon* was ſo kind as to take us on Board his Ship. He was bound from *Portſmouth*, as Convoy to Seventeen *Engliſh* Merchant Ships, that were going to *Lisbon*. As our Bowels had been ſo much relax'd, and it being the Opinion of the Phyſicians (whom, however, we did not go

to

to consult on purpose) that there was no danger in Eating and Drinking heartily, no sooner were the Provisions brought, but we were all glad to see our Beards wag. Every thing that was serv'd up to us was absorb'd as quick as if it had been thrown into a Well; but tho' our Bellies were full, we were not satisfy'd. We had no sooner granted a Respite to our Jaws, but we fell into a profound Sleep, and I question if there was one of us that did not sleep at least Twenty Hours before he was thoroughly awake. The Second Meal set us intirely to rights again. A Lieutenant of the Ship who spoke *French*, would needs have me give him the Particulars of our Misfortunes, some of which rais'd his Pity, and others his Laughter. At last we arriv'd at a good Harbour, and landed at *Lisbon* the first of *July*, without the Loss of one Man besides *Colombier*.

CHAP. II.

The Author's Stay at Lisbon, *&c.*

LISBON stands near the Mouth of the *Tagus*, in a Situation extremely diverting; and certainly 'tis one of the finest Cities in *Europe*. It has a considerable Trade, which renders it very populous and wealthy. According to the Calculation I made of it in the Bulk, there cannot be less than 20000 Houses. There are Thirty-five or Forty Gates for the Conveniency of the Inhabitants;

habitants; and I am very much mistaken if it be not two long Leagues in Compass.

THE Person to whom I made my Application, was one M. *Du Pre*, a Surgeon by Profession, a Man who had a great deal of Practice, and was capable of finding me Employment. In short, the good Man receiv'd me with open Arms. I had been with him but a very little while ere I discover'd that he was one of the Reformed, for he went very seldom to Mass, often read Sermons to his Children, and not a *Sunday* went over his Head but he catechis'd them privately: And he, for his part, quickly perceiv'd also that I was very far from a Bigot; so that he confess'd to me he kept the Bible at home for the Instruction of his Family, which he carry'd me to see.

TO speak the Truth, the first time that I gave it a Reading, which was dispatch'd in a very little time, I took it for an ill-concerted Romance, to which however I gave the Name of Sacred Stories. The Book of *Genesis* seem'd to me to be meer Fiction; the *Jewish Law* and *Ceremonies* a Medley of Trifles and Childish Vanities; the *Prophesies* an Abyss of Obscurities, and the most ridiculous Nonsense; and the *Gospel* a pious Fraud, invented to cajole silly Women, and captivate the Vulgar. What shock'd me first of all was to find, that in the Work of the Creation there was Light, before the Luminaries which produce it, and without which all wou'd be Darkness and Obscurity. Then I boggled at the Fatal Necessity Man was laid under to labour and die, as a pretended Consequence of his Crime. Afterwards I reflected on the Sentence pass'd upon the Wo-

man, to bring forth Children in Sorrow, and that on the Serpent, to creep on its Belly, as if before it had Legs. The Rainbow, which was plac'd in the Clouds after the Deluge, to diſpoſſeſs Mankind of the Fear of periſhing by a ſecond Flood: The Favour granted by Heaven to *Lot*, to depart out of *Sodom*, that he might be at liberty to go immediately and commit a double Inceſt with his Daughters: The Amours of *Pharaoh* and of *Sarah* the Wife of *Abraham*; and the Rape committed on her, when ſhe was a decrepid old Woman, by *Abimelech* King of *Gerar:* The frequent Dialogues between the Creature and his Creator: The Paſſage over the *Red Sea*, and the many other Miracles wrought for the *Jews:* The Aſs, whoſe Mouth was open'd to ſay ſo little to the Purpoſe; and a thouſand other Difficulties of the ſame Nature, puzzled my Reaſon to a prodigious Degree. I cou'd not comprehend how Effects cou'd precede their Cauſes. I had been ſo often taught the contrary in the Schools, and daily Experience had ſo many times confirm'd this Truth to me in the Works of Nature, that I did not care ſo much as once to think of it. I thought it altogether as abſurd to ſuppoſe that Man wou'd have been immortal, if he had not diſobey'd God, becauſe I did not ſee any Appearance that the Order and Conſtitution of his Parts wou'd have ſuffer'd any Alteration, after he had receiv'd Life. Nor did I conceive how the Earth wou'd have been in a Condition to bear its Fruits continually in the ſame Abundance, without Cultivation, unleſs it had been quite of another Nature then, than it is at preſent,

ſent, which is not probable: I had read a hundred Voyages, which aſſur'd me that the Women in general, in the *Eaſt-Indies*, in *Africa*, and in *America*, about the Line, ſcarce ſuffer any Pain at all in the Delivery of the Humane Species into the World; inſomuch that the Women of *Braſil* commonly go to be deliver'd near ſome Spring or River, where they waſh themſelves, cleanſe the Infant, and then carry it to their Husbands, who immediately take to their Beds, where they lie-in, and receive the Compliments of the Goſſips, while the Woman goes abroad for Proviſion to regale them. On the other hand, among the People who live towards the Poles, the Sex ſuffers a vaſt deal at ſuch times, and even many of them loſe their Lives; ſo that this varies proportionably to the Climates, and to Peoples Conſtitutions. 'Tis the very ſame thing in Beaſts, which for no Crime by them committed, are equally ſubject to thoſe different Changes. In fine, for it wou'd require whole Volumes to exhauſt this Subject, when I conſider'd the Cauſe of the Rainbow, and its Bigneſs, and Colours, having made a hundred artificial ones my ſelf, which is eaſily done, by taking Water into one's Mouth and ſquirting it abroad, in ſome Place oppoſite to the Sun Beams, which has no very bright Objects beyond it, and by ſeveral other ways; I cou'd not well digeſt the Account which *Moſes* gives us of it, as a Meteor unknown before that time.

NEVERTHELESS, all theſe Obſtacles did not intirely diſcourage me; for I undertook to run over this holy Book a ſecond time, on condition, however, that, as I went thro' it, I might deſire

desire my Master to explain the difficult Passages. He consented to it, and we were every Day deeply engag'd in Disputes, during which the good Man frequently rav'd at me, and I was well off if he only call'd me a Libertine, and a stubborn Unbeliever. I said to him sometimes, that it was no strange thing to see a Crowd of Swimmers follow the rapid Course of a wide deep River, because 'tis every whit as agreeable as 'tis easy; but as soon as any one Man turns his Back to the others, cutting the Stream, and hastening nimbly towards its Fountain, they are all surpris'd at the Action; for which, some admire him, and others, especially his Companions, envy him to such a degree, that they are ready to burst with Spite, and do every thing they can imagine to discredit and ruine him, because what he does is an evident Proof of Skill and Vigour on his Part, and of meer Dastardy and Folly on their Part. 'Tis the same thing as to our Sentiments concerning the Sciences, and especially Religion; the first we imbibe stick with us, so that we cannot bear to be contradicted. We are disgusted with every thing that is not conformable to them, and from the Moment that a Man talks of discarding them, he is infallibly reckon'd a Mad-man, or a Knave. Mean time, I declare to you, that as I entertain a much more favourable Opinion of a Man who swims against the Stream, than of another who suffers himself to be insensibly born away with it, so I am infinitely more inclin'd to think well of that Man's Penetration and solid Judgment, who examines every thing, and even sometimes opposes Opinions long since receiv'd, than of those Men

Men who hold Sentiments, as by Right of Inheritance, from their Anceſtors, and who only retain them for the ſake of their Age or their Authority; becauſe it ſeldom happens that People go out of the common Road, without Reaſons for ſo doing; whereas 'tis not ſo much expected that Men ſhou'd give their Reaſons for not deviating from it.

AT the beginning of our Converſation, another Affair happen'd, which gave occaſion to another Diſpute. A Captain of a Ship having brought ſome Negroes from *Africa*, made a Preſent of one of the handſomeſt to a Friend of his, a Man of Figure and Subſtance, but whimſical, and hard to be pleas'd. This Negro, after having liv'd ſeveral Years with ſo rigid a Maſter, and ſuffer'd a thouſand Abuſes from him, could bear it no longer, and reſolv'd, whatever might be the Conſequence, to take Revenge in a way the moſt dangerous that cou'd be. For this End, he went to the Apothecary that ſerv'd the Family, and under pretence that they were extremely peſter'd with Rats, he deſired two or three Pennyworth of Arſenic. The Fellow was ſcarce got out of the Shop to do ſome Errands, when the Apothecary ſent to tell the Gentleman, that ſince his Black came for the Ratsbane, he had thought of an admirable Compoſition to deſtroy thoſe Vermin, and that if he pleas'd he would immediately ſend him the Receipt. The Gentleman, who was naturally of an uneaſy Temper, being ſurpris'd at this Meſſage, and the more becauſe he very well remember'd that he had us'd his Domeſtic barbarouſly but the Day before, ſent for

for him to know what he meant to do with that Poiſon, and ſwore by all that's ſacred he would murder him, if he gave him the leaſt Cauſe to ſuſpect him. It happen'd that the Valet was not then in the way, but as ſoon as he came home, a Servant-maid, who dreaded that ſhe ſhou'd ſee him broke upon the Wheel, gave him ſecret Notice of what had paſs'd. The Wretch was ſadly affrighted; and being conſcious that he had not Courage enough to ſtand the Teſt, he ſtole away, and without more ado, hang'd himſelf. Mean time, his Maſter was out of all Patience becauſe he did not ſee him; and after having order'd Meſſengers to go and find him out, at the Places to which he had ſent him, a Footman came and ſurpris'd him with the News, that he found him hanging in the Corn-Loft.

THE Noiſe of this tragical Action was quickly ſpread every where. The Gentleman being one of my Maſter's beſt Patients, he went to him immediately, and deſired him for ſeveral Reaſons to order it ſo, that he might have the Body. The Gentleman, who was a Perſon of no ſmall Influence, made no Scruple to aſſure him he ſhould have it, and the very ſame Day he perform'd his Promiſe. As ſoon as the Body was put into our Hands, we diſſected it in form. All the Parts of it were diſpoſed like thoſe of the Body of a white Man, at leaſt, we obſerv'd no Difference; but what ſurpris'd us was, to find immediately under the *Epidermis*, a very thin delicate Membrane, which my Maſter had never perceived in other Bodies, and which I had never heard of before. He immediately ſent for a famous Phyſician of the Town,

Town, to whom he imparted this Diſcovery, but the Doctor did not ſeem ſo much ſurpris'd as I expected, for the ſame thing had happen'd to him upon the like Occaſion. We concluded that this muſt be the true Cauſe of the Blackneſs of this Race of Men, foraſmuch as this Tunick ſtifles, and no doubt abſorbs the Rays of Light; as on the contrary, a Leaf of Quickſilver plac'd behind *Venice* Glaſs, makes them reflect, and ſtrikes them back towards the Place from whence they came. This gave occaſion to a ſtrong Debate concerning the Origin of the *Ethiopians*, which, when we conſider this remarkable Difference, ſeems not to be the ſame with other Men. Upon this Principle I was going to draw Conſequences which would have tended to no leſs than the intire Subverſion of the Syſtem of the Sacred Author in Debate. But I was ſilenc'd by being told, That there were many things, which it was the Will of Heaven we ſhould admire, but are forbid to dive into.

I WAS much delighted to hear this Doctor diſcourſe upon the Conſtruction and Operations of the Humane Body. He ſpoke *Latin* like *Cicero*, and was as good an Orator as *Demoſthenes*. I was charm'd with every thing he ſaid, becauſe the Terms in which he expreſs'd himſelf were ſtrong, and well-choſen; and he always aim'd to be clear and intelligible.

NOT to give you a Detail of the long Converſation we had upon this fine Subject, I will only mention that he obſerv'd three things to us, which ſpread themſelves in general over the whole Body; the one externally, which is the Skin;

Skin; and the two others, which are the Veins and Nerves, in the Internal, and leſs viſible Parts of the Corporeal Maſs. The Skin, *ſaid he*, is neceſſary to the Creature, becauſe, like a Shell, it covers, incloſes, and wraps about its Members on all Sides, in ſuch a manner as to defend every Part of us againſt the Injuries of the Air, as it does the Face and Hands, if we were inur'd to expoſe the whole Body in the like manner. The Veins and Arteries, thoſe Rivulets, in which flows the Blood, the true Principle and immediate Cauſe of Life, derive their Streams from the Heart, and run thro' the whole Machine, ſo that it is not poſſible to prick it in any Place, be it ever ſo ſmall, without piercing ſome of their Branches; which is plain from the Vermilion Colour of the Moiſture that inſtantly ſtarts out. In ſhort, there is no Part in us where we do not meet with Nerves; this is clear, and may eaſily be prov'd, beyond all Contradiction or Queſtion. All theſe Nerves, without Exception, proceed from the Brain, where, like ſo many Strings, Twigs, or hollow Tubes, their ſeveral Extremities are ſo rang'd, one by another, that they form a ſort of Sphere, in the middle of which there is a ſmall Glandule extremely ſenſible and delicate; and to the Baſis are faſten'd an infinite Number of imperceptible Arteries, by which a prodigious Quantity of Spirits flow to it from the Heart, which Spirits keep the Glandule in a continual Agitation, and ready to yield to the leaſt extraneous Motion.

TO

TO illuſtrate this by an Example; Suppoſe I have in my Hands a thouſand Ends of Thread ty'd together, 'tis impoſſible that any one ſhou'd be pluck'd without my perceiving it immediately, tho' I can't point to the very Place where the Attraction is made. Admitting therefore theſe Nerves, or the little Fibres of which they are compos'd, to be full of Spirits, as indeed they always are when we are awake, tho' they are partly depriv'd of 'em while we ſleep; if any Object whatſoever happen to ſtrike againſt the exterior End, or againſt any other Part of thoſe Tubes, it is evident, that when they are full, and by Conſequence extended, the other Extremity which is in the Brain, muſt be ſenſible of the Shock, and communicate the Motion to the Glandule, which muſt unavoidably be acknowledg'd to be the Seat of the Underſtanding. And foraſmuch as Experience has taught me from the Cradle, that the Blows, Wounds, and other Ailments which my Body ſuffers, generally come to it from without, as often as I perceive the leaſt Agitation in one of my Parts, I cannot but aſcribe the Cauſe of it to ſome external Agent, nor help believing that 'tis really the Extremity of ſome Nerve, and no other Part, which was touch'd. We are alſo by Nature ſo far prepoſſeſs'd in favour of this Opinion, that thoſe, for Example, who have had the Misfortune to loſe an Arm, complain they feel the Pain at their Fingers, and in no other Place; which is a Truth that every Day's Experience confirms. Whether therefore the Impulſion be made by the Rays of Light on the Optic Nerves, or by the ſmall Particles of our Food

Food upon the Nerves which communicate with the Tongue, or by the imperceptible Effluvia from Bodies which we call Scented, upon the Source of the Olfactory Nerves, or in what other manner ſoever this be, it amounts to the ſame thing; the Organs may be as different as they will, 'tis the Touch is the ſole Cauſe of all the Perceptions we are capable of. From hence it appears, that neither they who limit the Number of the Senſes to Five, nor others, who not knowing under which of thoſe Five to place Hunger, Thirſt, and the Pleaſure of Love, increaſe them to Eight; it appears, I ſay, that neither of 'em have a right Notion of the Nature of the Senſes, becauſe 'tis manifeſt from what we have ſaid, that there is abſolutely but one.

MOREOVER, *continued he*, I cou'd eaſily demonſtrate, Mathematically, and by the Help of a Geometrical Figure, that 'tis impoſſible, ſtrictly ſpeaking, to have more than one Perception at a time, as perfectly as we are capable by Nature, and that when two or three are form'd together, they muſt needs be confus'd; for Experience tells us, that when we look upon an Object, the only Part of it which we ſee perfectly and diſtinctly, is the Point which correſponds with the Optic Axes, our Perception of the other Parts being only more or leſs, in Proportion to their Diſtance from the Center. Our Ideas or the Images of our Thoughts, are no more different from one another, than our Perceptions are; for tho' we admit of two ſorts of them, diſtinguiſh'd by the Terms, Conception and Imagination, 'tis certain that *Touching* is the ſole Cauſe of both the one and the other: 'Tis the

the only Source of all Human Knowledge, and alſo of our Reaſon, which, when all is ſaid and done, is nothing more nor leſs than the Union or Diſunion of Names, which, by common Conſent, we have impos'd upon Subſtances, as they appear to our Comprehenſion to bear a Conformity to their Qualities, and not at all to their Exiſtence. Other Creatures having Organs like to ours, have no doubt the ſame Perceptions, and 'tis only the Degree of more or leſs, that can conſtitute the Difference. The Beaſts therefore have Reaſon; and tho' they don't ſhew it, 'tis only for want, perhaps, of Speech to give Names, as we do, to things which affect them by being put in Motion; for, in other Matters, they are very capable of diſtinguiſhing ——

HERE our Phyſician was interrupted on a ſudden, by a terrible Shriek from the Maid-Servant. The poor Girl, as ſhe was bringing an Armful of Wood from the Corn-Loft, had made a falſe Step, and fell from the Top of the Ladder to the Ground. We all ran out to her Aſſiſtance, and found that ſhe had broke her right Leg. The Doctor, after having ſeen it dreſs'd the firſt time, went home, to my very great Concern; for, beſides ſome Objections which I was ready to have offer'd, I ſhould have been very glad to have heard the Concluſion of ſo curious a Diſcourſe; and was the more mortify'd afterwards, becauſe I could never get another Opportunity to engage that ingenious Gentleman to talk with me upon the ſame Subject.

TO return therefore from this first Digression; I must say, that tho' M. *Du Pre* was far from being a Philosopher, yet the few Hints I had from him, together with *Calvin*'s Commentaries, which he put into my Hands, were of very great Service to me. From hence I had an Opportunity of observing, That the Creation of Light means nothing more than the Formation of that subtle Matter of which the Stars were compos'd upon the fourth Day; and that tho' *Moses* spoke of Day and Night before that Day, it was only by way of Anticipation, as he said in another Place, That God made Man, Male and Female, before he had caus'd a profound Sleep to fall upon *Adam*, and form'd a Companion for him out of one of his Ribs. I also very easily comprehended, as well with regard to the Penalties which were imposed upon our first Parents, as with regard to the Rainbow, *&c.* That both the one and the other were at first Natural Signs, which God chang'd at that time into Signs of Institution; much like what we observe with respect to the holy Sacraments of Baptism and the Lord's Supper. And as to the Term *Beginning*, at the Head of the Book of *Genesis*, it did not perplex me, tho' it puzzles many others. I knew very well, that in Philosophy we must distinguish External Time from the Internal; as in Geometry, we distinguish an External Dimension from an Internal one, if I may be indulg'd the Expression; which is as much as to say, that we must make a Difference between a thing which has been measured, and whose Dimensions are known, and another which has not. My Chamber,

Chamber, for Example, has its Dimenſions, that's undeniable; but meer Theory cannot aſcertain the Contents, Practice muſt be added to it, and ſome common Method muſt be made uſe of, which Men are agreed on beforehand, ere we can be able to ſay exactly how many Feet, Inches, or ſquare Lines it contains. By this means, thoſe Dimenſions which were at firſt internal and ſecret, become external and known, with regard to the external Meaſures which ſerv'd to determine the Contents. All Beings in Nature therefore have an Internal Time, and an External Time; their Internal Time is that Duration whereby they continue in their actual and real Exiſtence, which extends from the Beginning to the End of them; their External Time is the Duration of the Earth, as far as its Motion is imploy'd to meaſure it; ſo that the External Time of a Thing is the ſame, with reſpect to its Internal Time, as the Meaſure to the Thing meaſur'd. We can have no Idea of any but Internal Time abſtractedly, before the Creation of the World, becauſe then there was no Being exiſtent, but God, the Being of Beings, whoſe Duration is without Beginning or End, and cannot properly be defin'd or meaſur'd: But the very Moment that the Sun appear'd in the Firmament, and that the Earth was ſuppos'd to turn round its Centre, which it does from Weſt to Eaſt, in a certain Space of Time, the Name of a Day Natural was given to each of thoſe Periods; and that of Hours, Minutes, &c. to the leſſer Parts, juſt as the Succeſſion of ſeven Days is call'd a Week; the Moon's Revolution from Weſt to Eaſt, a

Month; the Revolution of the Earth round the Sun, a Year, &c. These common Measures help us to mark out the Time, and by rendring what was Internal in its own Nature, External for our Use, no wonder that without going farther backwards, we confine our selves to this Beginning, and only make a Computation of Time, since proper Measures were thought of to fix the Duration of it.

THE Solution of these Difficulties made the Explanation of others more easy to me. I began to perceive the Connexion in the great Work of Redemption, the Harmony and Relation betwixt the Passages of the Old Testament and the New, and how the Antecedents and Consequents reciprocally depend upon one another; so that at the third Reading of the Bible I concluded, that the Creation of the World, and the Fall of Man, the Deluge, and the Passage of the Red Sea, the Ceremonial Law, and Circumcision, the Menaces and Promises, the Dreams, Visions, and Prophecies, and the most remarkable Transactions in the Republic of *Israel*, were only Types, Allegories, Emblems, Figures, and Shadows, which referr'd only to the New Covenant, ow'd their Lustre purely to the Light of the Gospel, and had Christ for their real Body.

MY Landlord was charm'd at this Metamorphosis. He admir'd to observe the sudden Transition, from that Coldness which made me look upon Things with Contempt, to a Zeal which prompted me to consider them with Esteem. Every thing that I did attracted his Applause; he had scarce ever seen my Fellow. But as there

is

is nothing in the World perfect, he obſerv'd one thing in me ſtill which gave him great Uneaſineſs. My Natural Complexion was fair; my Mother had indulg'd me always to wear a great Head of Hair, which cover'd my Shoulders; at which M. *Du Pre* was ſadly ſcandalis'd. Is it poſſible, *ſaid he once to me*, that a Youth who is ſo very intent on the Solution of the moſt difficult Paſſages of Scripture, ſhou'd not perceive that St. *Paul* poſitively forbids the wearing of long Hair, and that he thinks it a Shame for a Man to nouriſh, and take ſo much Care of it. I turn'd off his Remonſtrances to me, upon this Head, for a long time, with Banter; but perceiving that he ſpoke to me of it every Day with the more Earneſtneſs, I ſaid to him one Day in my Turn, 'Sir, Is it poſſible you ſhou'd not 'know, that as the Diverſity of the Seaſons of 'the Year obliges us to clothe our ſelves diffe-'rently, according to the Heat or Coldneſs of 'the Weather, ſo the Changes which happen in 'Society engage us to obſerve different Maxims? 'Heretofore, *ſaid I*, long Hair was a Mark of 'Subjection. When a Slave was freed, his Head 'was ſhav'd as a Token of the Liberty that had 'been granted him; and 'tis to this that the Apo-'ſtle alludes. Under the Law, we were Slaves 'to Sin, he means, but we are made free by 'Grace. Why ſhou'd we ſtill carry the Marks 'of our old Bondage about us, as the Wife does, 'who is dependent on her Husband? At that 'Time there were Slaves, tho' the Uſe of them 'is now very much loſt among the Chriſtians. I 'own the Text ſays, that we are taught by Na-

'ture not to pride our ſelves in our Hair; but this 'Expreſſion is not to be taken in its ſtricteſt 'Senſe, for Nature there ſignifies nothing but 'Cuſtom. Naturally we have nothing that is 'ſuperfluous. Our Hair was given us for the 'Guard and Preſervation of the Head, and the 'upper Parts of the Body, as Nails are Wea-'pons with which Nature has provided us for our 'Defence. Nature, therefore, does not oblige 'us to cut off the one, or pare the other; but 'tis rather what we call the Mode, Decency, and 'certain Civil Laws eſtabliſh'd among People, 'which at the long Run we look upon as Na-'tural. The Faſhion of this Age authoriſes the 'wearing of long Hair, and I don't think it any 'Harm to follow it, eſpecially in this Part of the 'World, where, by the Confeſſion of People of 'the beſt Senſe, and the generality of Divines, 'the Thing is abſolutely a Matter of Indifference.' But all this was not enough to convince my Maſter; ſo that to ſatisfy him, I was fain to permit him to make uſe of his Sciſſors, and to crop my Hair even to my Ears. This Change of Cuſtom was an Uneaſineſs to me; but, in ſhort, what will not a Man do for the ſake of Peace and a good Underſtanding with his Neighbour? And really this Complaiſance of mine won me his Heart to ſuch a Degree, that he wou'd have laid down his Life for me upon occaſion. His Perſon, his Family, his Goods, all were at my Service and Diſpoſal.

BESIDES theſe Advantages, which were very conſiderable for a Foreigner, as I was, he procur'd me the Acquaintance of many of his intimate Friends,

Friends, and particularly of a Factor of the *Dutch* Company, who was indeed one of the moſt agreeable young Men that I ever knew. He talk'd *French* very well, and was perfectly acquainted with his Religion, of which I took an Opportunity to converſe with him, whenever we ſaw one another, which I endeavour'd ſhou'd be as often as poſſible. I had moreover this Happineſs, that he accommodated me with every thing I wanted, and wou'd not ſuffer me for the World to be troubleſome to my Maſter, who, however, was a courteous good-natur'd Gentleman. He never made an Entertainment, but he engag'd me to be of the Party; and the worſt on't was, he treated ſo liberally that we had occaſion to remember it generally for two Days after it. One time he debauch'd me ſo, that next Day I was ſeiz'd with a violent Fever, which really had like to have coſt me my Life; for it ſtuck to me three Weeks, and made me as lean as a Skeleton, ſo that I was nothing but Skin and Bones; and my Phyſician actually gave me over. However, by obſerving a regular Diet, I at length recover'd. During this, I made continual Reflections upon the ſevere Laws which Nature ſo punctually executes upon poor Mortals; and being ſenſible that there are few Exceſſes which ſhe does not puniſh, I concluded in my Mind, that Frugality and Temperance are the true Means of keeping the Mind always free, and of ſecuring the Body from all the Diſtempers to which we are otherwiſe, almoſt all of us, ſubject. This made me take a firm Reſolution to be more temperate for the future, than I had been in time paſt, and ne-

ver to be guilty of any thing with which I might reproach my ſelf afterwards. *Van Dyke*, which was the *Dutchman's* Name, had made the ſame Reſolution before I knew him, but his Generoſity, when he had a mind to regale his Friends, oblig'd him ſometimes to recede from it, and not always to put in practice the good Leſſons which he ſcarce ever fail'd to give when he was the Gueſt of his Friends. However, I made him own at laſt, That when Health is at ſtake, it was better to be reckon'd an Oeconomiſt, than a Man of Generoſity and Complaiſance.

DURING this, the good Man had a troubleſome Affair upon his Hands, which gave me more Uneaſineſs than it did him. He receiv'd a Letter from the Wife of one of his Merchants, which requir'd him in her Husband's Abſence, to furniſh M. *Heudde's* Son, who was her Nephew, and then ſet out for *Lisbon*, with what Neceſſaries he wanted to continue his Voyage; adding, that he ſhould be reimburs'd, and that for her own part, ſhe ſhou'd be much oblig'd to him for the Favour. In about a Fortnight after, M. *Heudde* arriv'd at *Van Dyke's*, attended by a Valet de Chambre, who were both very meanly accoutred. The firſt Queſtion he ask'd him was, Whether he had not receiv'd a Letter from his Aunt, which the Factor no ſooner own'd, than he entertain'd him with a great many Particularities about ſeveral Perſons of the Factor's Acquaintance; after which, he told him his Deſign of viſiting *Portugal*, *Spain*, *Italy*, *France*, and of returning home thro' the Iſland of *Great Britain*. At laſt he talk'd of the Money he

he shou'd have occasion for, to make the Tour of so many Countries. *Van Dyke* told him what he thought would suffice; and as he exhorted him not to be extravagant on the one hand, so he wou'd not have him disparage himself on the other, because he had Orders to accommodate him with what Monies he wanted, not only at *Lisbon*, but wherever else he travell'd: This the Factor cou'd easily do, because he had very good Correspondence, either directly or indirectly, in most of the chief Towns of *Europe*. M. *Heudde*, who seem'd very well pleas'd with the Compliment, contented himself with the Sum of 15000 Livres, and good Recommendations; and after having staid a few Days, continu'd his Journey. *Van Dyke*, who was a very punctual Man in his Business, immediately certify'd his Principal of what had pass'd betwixt him and his Nephew, and what Rout he had taken. But in a Week after, to his great Surprise, who shou'd he meet in the Street, but him that pretended to be M. *Heudde*'s Valet de Chambre, and asking him if his Master was not gone, he answer'd him to his farther Astonishment, not only that he cou'd not tell what was become of him, but that he did not so much as know who he was. I came hither, said he, some Days ago from *Bourdeaux*, with a Design to make a Voyage to *America*; the Gentleman, you speak of, happening to be on Board our Ship, bargain'd with me to be his Servant, as long as he continued in this City, for Twenty-pence a Day, besides my Expences, which he paid me, but dismiss'd me last Week, and I have not since heard a Word of him. This was

ſomewhat alarming to my Friend; and tho' he was not very ſure that he was bubbled, he had the Precaution to write immediately to all thoſe to whom he had given the Traveller his Recommendations, and deſired them not to let him have any thing till farther Orders. This ſav'd him from any farther Loſs, but his 300 Ducats were gone paſt Recovery. The Anſwer he receiv'd from *Holland* was, That they knew not what he meant, and that this pretended M. *Heudde* was a Knave, to be ſure, that wou'd come to the Gallows.

THO' this Loſs was a Trifle to the Wealth M. *Van Dyke* had acquir'd, yet it vex'd him a little, and he left no Stone unturn'd to find out the Sharper, but all his Inquiry was to no Purpoſe; and whether he ever heard of him in his Life, is more than I know, becauſe I left him not long after; for tho' I was heartily welcome to him, yet I did not thoroughly like my Station there, becauſe my Profit was but ſmall, and my principal View was to ſee the World. The Friendſhips I had contracted, and the Character my Maſter gave me, made my Departure the more eaſy.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Of the Author's Second Voyage; and his Shipwreck upon an unknown Coaſt.

I HAD an Opportunity of going on board a *Portugueſe* Ship, which was bound to the *Eaſt Indies*, in Company with three others. It was commanded by one *Don Pedro*, and carry'd only Twenty Guns, but had 147 Men aboard, of which Number were a great many *Frenchmen*, who however, to a Man, underſtood the *Portugueſe* Tongue. All things being ready, we ſet ſail the Fifth of *June*, 1644, with a very favourable Wind. The firſt Ruffle we met with was the Loſs of our Captain, who was, to ſpeak the Truth, a Man of conſummate Experience, but a very Brute and Deboſhee. The Tenth Day after we were under Sail, when he had taken his uſual Doſe of Brandy, he fell into ſuch a Paſſion with one of our Seamen, that from hard Words he proceeded to Blows. The Mariner, who was a meer Blunderbuſs, laugh'd, and went to make his Eſcape from him, at which *Don Pedro* was ſo exaſperated, that he purſued him with a Lever in his Hand, wiſhing the Devil might take him if he did not break his Neck; and as they were both running, our Officer ſtumbled, reel'd, and fell with ſuch a Force againſt the Capſtane, that he broke his left Arm, three Inches above the Elbow. Thereupon I was call'd, and examining the Wound, I perceiv'd that the Bone was intirely ſhiver'd, and after mature Deliberation, I

was

was abſolutely for Sawing it off. But all that I cou'd ſay, was of no weight with the Patient, who cou'd not be perſuaded by any means to undergo the Operation; for he ſwore that he wou'd rather die than ſubmit to ſo deſperate an Extremity. I was therefore oblig'd, ſorely againſt the Grain, to manage him as he pleas'd; but what I foreſaw, happen'd in two Days time; the Wound was inflam'd, a Mortification enſu'd upon it, and the Fifth Day after his Fall he was a dead Man.

THE Ship's Company was, to the laſt Degree, alarm'd at this Loſs, which we took for a bad Omen; however, we were forc'd to bear it, and after the due Honours paid to his Corpſe, it was thrown into the Sea, while the Guns were fir'd, as uſual on ſuch Occaſions. In the mean time we advanc'd in our Voyage; and tho' ſome little Storms aroſe now and then, yet they were not dangerous. The greateſt Misfortune that befel us, was our being ſeparated from the Company of our other Ships, ſo that we heard no more of them. When we made the Iſland of *Aſcenſion*, we perceiv'd that our Water was very much corrupted, and conſequently we reſolv'd to go to St. *Helena*, to take in freſh Water, leſt the Number of our ſick Men, which was already conſiderable, ſhould be much greater, if we did not ſtop ſome where before we came to the *Cape of Good Hope*.

BUT when we had diſcover'd that Iſland at a great Diſtance, and were congratulating each other upon it, we ſpy'd that which Sailors call a *Wool-Pack*, ſeemingly as big as a great Cask, within Cannon-ſhot of our Ship. As I had never

ver ſeen any but in Pictures, and in Books of Travels; I conſider'd this Phænomenon with all the Attention I was capable of, and concluded that it muſt be really owing to Air that was agitated, and drove with Impetuoſity into the vaſt Region of our Atmoſphere, which happening to meet with another ſort of Hurricane impell'd from the oppoſite Part of the Atmoſphere, whirls back towards its Baſis, and forms the Figure of a Cylinder, which lengthens it ſelf in an Inſtant, till it comes to the Surface of the Water: The Sea being then preſs'd on all Sides, except juſt there, the Matter which correſponds to the middle of this Column, like what we obſerve with regard to Pumps, Syringes, and Cupping-Glaſſes, muſt needs riſe, which it does with ſo much Rapidity and Force, even to the bearing away of great Fiſh, that to the Amazement of us all, the Sky, as ſerene as it was before, was cover'd with thick Clouds, which darken'd the Air in a Moment. The Winds began to roar hideouſly, the Sea was in a Foam, the Waves ſwell'd, and one wou'd have thought that Nature, in the Height of her Indignation, wou'd have ſwallow'd us up. The Seamen, in the utmoſt Hurry, furl'd all the Sails, the Main-Sail only excepted; nevertheleſs the Ship was carry'd away with ſuch Violence, that we were alſo oblig'd to let down the Main-Sail for fear of being drove upon ſome fatal Rocks I cannot here prevail with my ſelf to ſet down every minute Particular from the Journal that I kept of what happen'd to us during this dreadful Tempeſt, which laſted Twenty-two Days, becauſe it would

would take up ſeveral Sheets of Paper, and only raiſe the Reader's Pity and Concern. Not only the Women and Children that were aboard gave ſuch Shrieks, as were enough to have pierc'd the moſt obdurate Hearts, but the generality of the Men were frighted almoſt out of their Wits. Not a Day paſs'd but one or other of them dy'd. We alſo loſt our Pilot and the Mate, ſo that the only Man left capable of conducting the Veſſel, was the Maſter of it, and he too was in a bad State of Health. During this bitter Storm, we were compell'd to throw over-board, at ſeveral times, 12 of our Guns, and every thing that we thought too heavy; we alſo loſt moſt of our Anchors, and ran a-drift a long while at the Mercy of the Winds and Currents, without knowing whither we were driving, any more than if we had been at the bottom of the Ocean. At length it pleaſed God, of his ſpecial Mercy, that on the Twenty-third Day, a Day as mild as the others had been ſevere, we happen'd to run aſhore at a Place altogether unknown to us, where, after having calculated the Meridian, examin'd our Watches, and made as correct a Computation as we could, we found that we were in about 60 Degrees of Longitude, and 44 of S. Latitude, *i. e.* 1000 or 1200 Leagues from St. *Helena*. The biggeſt of our Boats having been carry'd away by the Waves, which had waſh'd our Decks a thouſand times, glad we were that we had preſerved the leaſt; we immediately put aſhore in her; and after having return'd Thanks to God for having ſav'd our Lives, we began to take our beſt Clothes and Goods out of the Ship, together

gether with what wou'd be moſt neceſſary for us by Land. With ſome paltry Sails we made two Tents; and ſome cut down the Branches of Trees, with which they built Barracks, in which the remainder of our Ship's Company, conſiſting of Eighty-five Perſons, lodg'd.

THERE were Forty of us that were as well as we cou'd be in our preſent Circumſtances, part of which Number look'd after the Ship, and the reſt went a marauding for what they could get. Never were Fire-Arms, Powder, and Shot, of more Service to us than now. There was all ſorts of Wild-Fowl in abundance, and particularly Hens larger than Turkeys, which were fat, and very nouriſhing. Nor did we want for Fiſh, becauſe we had good ſtore of Nets, Hooks, and other Inſtruments to catch them. Here were few Tortoiſes, but they were very good. We took ſome which I am ſure weigh'd from 400 to 500 Pound, and were enough for us all. We thought the Fleſh of them very excellent, and the Fat was the moſt delicate Food in the World. It ſerv'd us for all Purpoſes, for Sauce, or to eat upon Bread, or to burn; and in general, for almoſt every Neceſſity. In two Hours Walk from thence towards the Eaſt, we found a River, which ſupply'd us with very good Water. Notwithſtanding theſe Refreſhments, two more of our Men dy'd; but it was not long before the others recover'd.

MEAN time our Ship was ſo lighten'd, that we obſerv'd ſhe floated, ſo that we tow'd her to the River juſt now mention'd. As ſoon as ſhe was laid up, the Carpenters examin'd her very nicely,

nicely, and found that there was no likelihood of her being ever in a Condition to serve us in the Pursuit of our Voyage, because the Storm had intirely shatter'd her. We therefore resolv'd unanimously to take her to pieces, and with the best of her Materials to build a smaller, to return in to *Africa*. The Captain wou'd have had us all in our turns put our Hands to the Work; but we so fully convinc'd him that we were not all equally fit for it, and that there was an absolute Necessity for some body to provide the Kitchen with Victuals for feeding so many Mouths, that Ten of us were appointed to go in quest of Provisions. The Nine that were join'd with me, were very clever Fellows, part of them being as it were Huntsmen, and the rest Fishermen by Profession; consequently 'tis natural to imagine, that in such a Country as this, we did not find it a very hard Matter to get Food for our Company. These agreeable Occupations, which would have been a very great Pleasure to another Person, delighted me for a few Days; but I was soon weary of this Life, and my Curiosity to penetrate farther into a Country, where I did not imagine any body had ever been, made me resolve to abandon my Comrades, tho' I was not willing to put so rash a Design in Execution by my self. I therefore communicated my Design to two, that I thought the most resolute, who were overjoy'd with my Proposal, and declar'd to me severally, that they had entertain'd the same Thought, but were afraid to trust it to a third Person. Accordingly the Affair was concluded, upon Oath not to divulge

vulge it; and after we had promis'd to be true to each other, we went to rest, fully purposing to be gone as soon as possible.

CHAP. IV.

The Author, with only two Comrades, leaves the rest of the Company, and penetrates into those unknown Countries. The Obstacles he meets with in his Passage, &c.

THE next Day in the Morning, which was the 24th of *September*, 1644, and the 11th of our Arrival, we each took a Hatchet in our Belts, with a Gun, and whatsoever we thought necessary for an Enterprise of this Nature, and without more ado enter'd the Wood, leaving the others behind us, and made great Haste towards the S. S. W. We travell'd at least four long Leagues before we talked of resting. *La Foret*, who was one of my Comrades, as *Du Puis* was the other, perceiving a Heath-cock about a hundred Paces from us, shot him; while one pick'd it, I and the other fell to cutting of Fuel, and making a Fire under the Tree, at which we soon roasted our Fowl by a String. We made a hearty Dinner, only we wanted Drink, for which we were oblig'd to wait a little longer. As we proceeded in our Journey, we found a Pit of Water, which tho' not very clear, yet we thought it excellent: We fill'd our Flagons with it, but made little or no Use of it, for about a League

League and half further we came to a Brook, where the Water was really as good as I ever met with in my Life. It was about two Foot deep, and ran exactly acroſs that Part of the Road we had purpos'd to travel, by the help of a ſmall Sun-Dial that I had in my Pocket, which was of great Service to us. There being no Bridge, nor other Conveniency, we pull'd off our Stockings, *&c.* and waded thro' the Rivulet, leaving it with great Regret, after having drank our Bellies full, and laid in a Stock of it for time to come. We hitherto found no Trace of Man or Beaſt. The Country was all over Sand, Briars, and Foreſts, for a matter of Eight or Ten Leagues that we had travell'd before Sun-ſet. In fine, we pitch'd our Camp at the Foot of a little Hill, where there was a Coppice ſo thick that we were as much out of the Wind, as if we had been in a Tent. Then we eat for Supper what we left at Dinner, and made the beſt ſhift we could to repoſe our ſelves for Sleep.

THE next Morning when we wak'd, we were ſurpris'd to ſee the whole Firmament overcaſt, and threatning us with a heavy Storm; we therefore thought fit to dig a Cave in this Hill, which was pretty ſteep, on the Side where we were poſted, in order to ſhelter our ſelves from the bad Weather. In ſhort, we found in a trice, that by the Help of our Hatchets we had prepar'd a ſmall Lodging. The Rain, however, did not begin till about Eleven of the Clock, ſo that we had time enough to kill more Quails and other ſmall Birds, which for the moſt part were unknown to us, than we could ſpend in a Week.

There

There was a vaſt Multitude of 'em, and, generally ſpeaking, they ſuffer'd themſelves to be kill'd, without ſtirring from the Place, which was another Reaſon that induc'd us to think the Country cou'd not be, inhabited. After all, we were oblig'd to ſtay here four Days, which to us ſeem'd more tedious than four Weeks would have done elſewhere. But this Chagrin of ours was alleviated afterwards, for we enjoy'd fair Weather above a Month without Intermiſſion.

WHEN we had quitted our Lodging, we began to diſcover high Mountains, and for fear we ſhould not find Suſtenance there, we laid in a Stock of Proviſions for ſeveral Days. We were not miſtaken in our Conjectures; one would have ſworn it was another *Greenland*, the Place being all dry and barren, ſo that in many Parts there was neither Herb, nor Buſh, nor any thing that could give Nouriſhment to the minuteſt Animal; therefore we diſcover'd nothing worth mentioning: The Birds alſo were very ſcarce, from whence 'tis eaſy to imagine, that we ſpent our Time there very ill; and had it not been that every now and then we went down into certain little Valleys, where there were ſome paltry Fruit-Trees, and Water to quench our Thirſt, we had been in danger of periſhing.

THE Ninth Day of our Journey, towards the Evening, we arriv'd in a Vale, where, about a Quarter of a League from us, on the right Hand, we ſaw a little Torrent that deſcended from a Rock into a Hollow, from whence it ran into a Marſh, which form'd a Semi-Circle, but extended in the Center farther than our Eyes could reach.

reach. The Banks of this fine Water were high, and ſomewhat ſteep, which gave us reaſon to think that the River was then much lower than at another Seaſon of the Year. As I drew near it, in order to go into it, I was ſtartled to find the Ground give way all on a ſudden under my Feet, ſo that I fell in up to my Armpits. My Comrades ſeeing me ſtick there, fell a laughing, however they help'd me out. At the ſame time ten or twelve Birds, as big as our Geeſe, with Beaks as long and as broad as ones Hand, flutter'd under my Feet, darted like an Arrow into the Air, and ſounded an Alarm by a Noiſe of *Quacou*, *Quacou*, which was their natural Cry, and loud enough to be heard at a great Diſtance. Before one could tell a Hundred, the Sky was darkned with theſe Birds, which prodigious Number, together with the fearful Noiſe they made, ſcar'd us ſo, that we abſolutely knew not what to think of it; eſpecially when they accoſted us ſometimes in Bodies, with deſperate Cries, hovering within a Pike's Length of our Heads, and threatning as it were, to tear us Limb from Limb; and tho' we ſhot at them, and brought ſeveral of 'em to the Ground, it was ſtill the ſame; but when we ſaw that they meant us no Harm, and that they actually began to ſound a Retreat, we went to take ſome Refreſhment.

DU PUIS preſently remark'd, that the Place where I ſunk in, was a Neſt to which ſome of thoſe Birds were retired, by the Side of which was a Second, then a Third, and ſo on, about the diſtance of ten or twelve Foot from one another. The Mouth of theſe ſubterraneous Neſts

was

was of an oval Form, the ſmalleſt of which was a Foot in Diameter. I crept into the third, where I found a Place as big as a little Room, it being above eight Foot ſquare, and at leaſt three in Height. There were fifteen Neſts round it, all built in a circular Form, with ſmall Boughs full of Leaves, clay'd over, and they were three or four Feet in Circumference. In each Neſt were ſix ſpeckled Eggs, as big as one's Fiſt. In the middle of the Den, there was a ſort of Trough much bigger than thoſe Neſts, which was full of a certain Matter, divided into little round Bits, ſome longer than the others, which I imagin'd at firſt were their Excrements, but being ſo curious as to put it to my Lips, I found it of an excellent Taſte, exceeding our beſt Macaroons, which it very much reſembled. My Comrades, who were as fond as my ſelf to ſearch for Novelties, went ſeverally into other Dens, where they found things in the very ſame Situation and Order, as I have mention'd, only as the Cavities were not of the ſame Bigneſs, there were more Neſts in ſome than in others. We infer'd from thence, That no wonder there were ſuch Numbers of theſe Birds, becauſe they multiply to ſuch a Degree, and there's no body to deſtroy them.

SCARCE were we recover'd from our laſt Surprize, but we were infinitely more aſtoniſh'd at the Sight of one of theſe Caverns about a hundred Paces off. The Entrance of it could not poſſibly be the Fabrick of any Birds whatſoever, for three great Stones, each a Foot long, plac'd in the Earth, one by another, form'd the Threſhold,

and

and in the Door-way were large Flints, four Foot in height, and above a hundred Weight each, with other Stones plac'd in order, one behind another, which intirely ſhut it up. Theſe Productions of the Hand of Man made us heſitate whether we ought to wiſh to find Humane Beings here or not; 'tis true we ſhould have rejoic'd to ſee Creatures of our own Species, but we were afraid we ſhould not be very well us'd by them. Tho' we were in this ſad Quandary, we advanc'd towards it, but took care to cry out and make Noiſe enough, that we might be heard by any that ſhould happen to be within. *La Foret* being quite out of Patience to ſee what wry Faces we made, bid us ſtand on each Side with our Hatchets in our Hands, while he wou'd remove the Obſtacles, and open the Paſſage, that he might go in and examine what there was behind. He actually did ſo; but when he was in the Inſide, he found it too dark there to ſee any one thing. All that he told us when he came out was, that a Man might ſtand upright in it, and that the Apartment was habitable, he having felt a Bench there. Upon this we went and fell'd ſome Trees at a ſmall diſtance from us, where we cut as much Wood as we cou'd carry, and made a Fire before our Cavern, and, when it was well lighted, we enter'd into our Room, which was twice the Bigneſs of the others, neatly pav'd with choice little Flints, and border'd all round with a Bank of Turf.

BUT, O dreadful Sight! what ſhould we ſee at the ſame time upon the Bank, on the left, which was moſt ſhelter'd from the Wind, but a Humane Corpſe,

Corpſe, which was from Head to Foot a very Skeleton. Over it there was a kind of ſmooth Slate, faſten'd in the Wall, on which was engrav'd in the *Greek* Language, and in Capital Letters, ΆΓΙΟΣ ὉΘΕΟΣ, ΆΓΙΟΣ ἸΣΧΥΡΟΣ, ΆΓΙΟΣ ΚΑΙ ΆΘΑΝΑΤΟΣ, ΈΛΕΗΣΟΝ ἩΜΑΣ. *O holy God, holy and powerful, holy and immortal, have Mercy upon us!* Every one will naturally imagine, that various were our Conjectures and Sentiments of this Matter, which I will not therefore trouble my ſelf to repeat. Mean time, Hunger, which made us very ſharp-ſet, oblig'd us to take a Brace of the Birds we had kill'd, which we held over the Flame to burn off the Feathers, inſtead of skinning them, as we us'd to do, becauſe we fancy'd the Skin to be as delicate a Part as any; nor were we at all deceiv'd, for after having drawn them, and waſh'd 'em, we put 'em upon the Brands, where they were roaſted in a Moment, and as we had eat but very little all Day, we ſcarce left any thing, beſides Bones; for they were fat, juicy, and very well taſted. After having made a very hearty Supper, we ſettled our ſelves to ſleep, as well as we could, leaving the dead Man to his Cavern, without touching him, becauſe we had a mind to examine him more narrowly next Day.

IT was hardly Day-break, when our impertinent Birds renew'd their Noiſe, as they flew to and from their Holes, to ſuch a degree, that it was impoſſible for us to ſleep any longer, tho' we were heartily inclin'd to it. We ſtaid, however, till the Sun was up; but our Appearance did not at all alarm the Fowls which were all as

hard

hard employ'd about their ſeveral Occaſions, as if they had actually been in Pay. We ſaw ſome with their Bills full of Earth, which they brought, no doubt, from the moſt irregular Parts of their Holes, in order to make them either larger or neater. Others came with Materials for repairing their Neſts, but the generality carry'd thoſe Cracknels, which I thought ſo good the Night before. We aſcended the Eminence, to ſee from whence they brought this Food. As ſoon as we had lifted up our Eyes, we ſaw upon a little Hill, within a Musket-ſhot of us, three Bodies of the ſame Height and Bigneſs. We went to take a near View of them, and found, in ſhort, that they were three broken Pyramids, eight Foot in Height, five in Diameter at the Baſe, and about three at the Top, very regularly built of Flints neatly placed in Rows upon one another.

THE bare View of three ſuch rare Monuments in a Deſert Country, did not ſatisfy us; we were reſolv'd to take one of them to pieces; But as ſoon as we had taken off about the thickneſs of a Foot and half of the Stones at the top, we diſcover'd firſt the Skull of a Humane Creature, then the Shoulder-Bones, Arm-Bones, and in a word, the whole Carcaſe. We juſt diſcover'd the Head of a Corpſe, which was in the Second, but went no farther, becauſe probably it was all the ſame in the laſt. While we were reflecting upon all this with a ſort of Wonder, I went and diſcover'd round the third Pyramid certain Characters, form'd alſo of little Flints, almoſt like Pidgeons Eggs, which I took for the following *Hebrew* Letters; and they were rang'd on the

Ground in this Order, *Koph*, *Vau*, *Lamed*, *He*, *Teth*, *Lamed*, *Koph*, *Pe*, *Gimel*, *Vau*, *Beth*, *Thau*, *Hajin*, *Koph*, *Mem*, *Lamed*, *Aleph*, *Sajin*, *Samech*, *Reſch*; but they had no Points, nor any other Mark to explain them. I try'd my utmoſt to find out the Meaning of them, and have thought on't a thouſand times ſince, but could never accompliſh it, which way ſoever I ſet about it. There was ſomething of the like kind round the two other Monuments, but I did not think it worth while to take off the Stones that we had caſt upon them. In all Appearance, theſe were the Remains of four poor Devils like our ſelves, who, after having rambled out of their Knowledge, and ſeeing no Likelihood of coming to any better Place than this, ſtopt here, dug a Cave after the manner of the Birds I mention'd, or perhaps took Poſſeſſion of one of their Neſts, and ſo dy'd there, one after another; firſt thoſe we ſaw under the Monuments, and then the laſt upon the Bench, where we found him, and where Time had ſo conſum'd his Clothes and Fleſh, that we did not ſee the leaſt Traces of either.

WHAT further confirm'd us in this Opinion was, that not far from hence there was a vaſt Number of Trees, as ſtraight as a Bulruſh, whoſe Branches grew all in Pyramidical Stories, ending at the Top in form of an Acorn, as big as an Egg. All the Branches of theſe Trees were like ſo many Plumes of Oſtrich-Feathers, that is to ſay, garniſh'd with ſmall Leaves like Strings, on both Sides. From one end to the other, and all round the Edge of this Plumage, there was a Border of

the Size of a Writing-Quill, and over each Row of Branches a Ring, which encompaſs'd the Tree, about the thickneſs of one's Finger, and was that excellent Food, of which our great Birds ſeem'd ſo dainty, and which we imagin'd the four poor Pilgrims eat inſtead of Bread.

FORASMUCH as I had but juſt taſted this Bread the Night before, I and my Comrades fell on it very heartily. It was who could climb beſt to come at it, where any was left; for in ſeveral Places there was none to be had. In fine, we cramm'd till we could ſwallow no more, and we all lik'd it ſo well, that *Du Puis* actually talk'd of building a Tabernacle, and dying there, as the Owners of thoſe Skeletons ſeem'd to have done. But while we were talking of this Subject, we were overtaken with ſuch a ſudden Drowſineſs, that we could ſcarce heave our Legs from the Ground, and we all lay down. Not one of us was bereft of his Underſtanding, but our Members were all benumb'd, and we almoſt loſt the Uſe of Speech. We had been two Hours in this Condition, when we fell aſleep till the Afternoon.

DU PUIS, who was the firſt that awak'd, felt ſomething under his right Hand, betwixt Sleeping and Waking, which he thought naked, ſmooth, and as big as his Thigh. He imagin'd at firſt, that he had roll'd in his Sleep upon one of us, but recovering his Reaſon with the Revival of his Spirits, and opening his Eyes for better Information, he was terribly aſtoniſh'd to ſee betwixt him and *La Foret*, a Serpent, which was above twenty-five Foot long. He was more

depriv'd

depriv'd of the Uſe of his Members then, than before, and could neither ſtir nor ſpeak; in the mean time the Serpent retreated, twin'd himſelf about one of the neighbouring Trees, and crept up to taſte the Cracknels. Upon this, my Friend took Courage, jogg'd me, and when I awak'd, he ſhew'd me that hideous Animal. As weak as I ſtill found my ſelf, I got up in a Moment, and ran away as faſt as I could. *Du Puis* follow'd me, and *La Foret*, upon our calling out to him, did the like inſtantly. Glad we were that this Monſter had not ſwallow'd us up, the Fear of which was a ſtrong Motive to our Reſolution of decamping forthwith; but we were forc'd to ſtay all Night to recover our ſelves.

CHAP. V.

Continuation of the Adventures of the Author and his Comrades, till they came to an Inhabited Country.

FINDING our ſelves freſh and brisk when we wak'd, we reſolv'd to ſhift our Quarters; and, deſpiſing this terreſtrial Manna which had ſo enervated us, after laying in a good Stock of the roaſted Fowls for our Proviſion, we bid adieu to the Monuments, and advanc'd farther into the Country. We were then full fifty Leagues from the Sea. We were inclinable to eat the firſt Night, but tho' we had walk'd a great deal, and paſs'd over a Mountain of ſeven

or eight Leagues, we had little or no Appetite; and it was three Days before we could take any thing; which gave us reaſon to think, that the Bread of the Tree muſt be extremely nouriſhing, and that it could not but be good, when taken with Moderation. Mean time, the Way prov'd worſe and worſe; but, to our Comfort, the Nights were clear, and the Days long, and the farther we advanc'd into the Spring of this Country, and the farther we got from the Line, the more charming we thought the Climate and the Soil; and either the one or the other was generally the Subject of our Converſation.

DU PUIS, above all things, ſeem'd to be charm'd with the Sun, which, from its Riſing to its Setting, continually ſmil'd on us with its agreeable Rays. I do aſſure you, ſaid he to us one Day, If I had not been born in a Country where the People are ſo happy as to be inſtructed in the Knowledge of their Creator, and if I had never heard a Word about the Being of all Beings, the Flambeau of Heaven would, without diſpute, be the only Deity that I ſhould think worthy of my Adoration; not only, becauſe of all the viſible Objects in the World 'tis the moſt agreeable, but becauſe without its Influence, no Plant nor Animal can ſubſiſt: Every thing languiſhes the Moment that it departs; whereas its Preſence renders Vigour to what before ſeem'd dying. You are not the only Man, ſaid I, of that Opinion; there are intire Nations that invoke this glorious Planet, as the prime Cauſe of all things; and even thoſe Ancients who acknowledg'd a Being of Sovereign Perfection, could not

help aſcribing certain Epithets to it, which plainly denoted their Eſteem for it. *Orpheus* call'd it, the *Eye of Heaven*. *Homer*, the *Being which ſees and hears all things*. *Heraclitus*, the *Fountain of Celeſtial Light*. St. *Ambroſe*, the *Beauty of Heaven*. *Philo*, the *Image of eternal Splendor*. *Plato*, the *Soul of the World*. King *David* extols its Excellency to a marvellous Degree, eſpecially in his 18th *Pſalm*; and the holy Men of the *Old* and *New Teſtament*, make no Scruple to repreſent it to us as the Model of the Divinity, whom they call in a hundred Places, *the Day-ſpring from on high*, and *the Sun of Righteouſneſs*.

I LAUGH, continued *La Foret*, at what ſome People have ſaid concerning the Planets. I pray to God, and if I have any Veneration for the Creatures, 'tis only for the Creator's ſake, who is marvellous in all his Works; but what ſurpriſes me moſt is to hear of two Motions of the Sun, which are directly oppoſite to each other, *viz.* its Daily Motion, from Eaſt to Weſt; and its Annual one, from Weſt to Eaſt. 'Tis true, reply'd I, theſe two Motions are directly contrary to one another, if they are aſcrib'd to the Sun, which is done by the Ancients univerſally; but nothing is more natural, if we aſcribe theſe two Motions to the Earth, which makes a great Circle round the Sun in the ſpace of a Year, and turns once upon its own Center or Axis in Twenty-four Hours, juſt as if you were to puſh a Bowl, or if you pleaſe, a Turnep, from one end of an Alley to the other, which, while it was rolling to the end of the Alley, would make ſeveral Turns at the ſame time upon its own Axis.

The Earth does the very ſame thing; and its two different Motions were always of uſe to Men to meaſure the Time of their Duration. The Tour which it makes upon its own Axis, forms our Natural Day of Twenty-four Hours; and the Time it takes in its grand Circle round the Sun, makes our Year of 365 Days and 6 Hours, wanting a few Minutes. 'Tis true, that this Computation or Meaſure for the Year was not known always alike to all Nations. The *Egyptians*, the *Chaldeans*, the *Jews*, and other ancient People, computed their Years differently, and made them longer or ſhorter, ſome than others. Many of them regulated their Years rather by the Courſe of the Moon, than that of the Earth, as ſeveral Nations do even at this Day.

THE Calendar now follow'd by the Nations of *Europe*, came from the ancient *Romans*, but was not always ſo exactly regulated as at preſent; for in the time of *Romulus*, the Founder of *Rome*, the Year, which ought to be the Time that the Earth is making its great Tour round the Sun, was computed at only 304 Days, included in 10 Months: *March*, *May*, *July*, *October*, conſiſted each of 31 Days, and the others of but 30. *Numa Pompilius*, his Succeſſor, added 51 to this Number, ſo that then the Year had 355 Days. Beſides, he cut off a Day from every leſſer Month, which he added to thoſe 51, and of theſe he inſtituted the Months of *January*, conſiſting of 29, and *February*, of 28 Days. In fine, *Julius Cæſar*, the firſt of the *Roman* Emperors, having conſulted the moſt skilful Aſtronomers of his Time, did, with their Conſent, change the Year, which was

was almoſt a Lunar Year, into a Solar one, by adding 10 more Days to it, which he diſtributed in ſuch manner, that *January*, *Auguſt*, and *December*, had each two, and *April*, *June*, *September*, and *November*, one. Nevertheleſs, as all this was not enough, becauſe the Year conſiſts of 365 Days, 6 Hours, wanting about 11 Minutes, the Emperor would have every 4 Years, a Year of 366 Days, which additional Day ſhould be plac'd between the 6th and 7th of the Calends of *March*, ſo that there were two 6th Days of the Calends of *March*, in ſuch a Year, which was therefore call'd *Biſſextile*, becauſe the 6th Day was reckon'd twice before they proceeded to the next.

THIS Correction, as juſt as it was thought to be, did nevertheleſs occaſion a Miſtake in the Calendar, in proceſs of Time; for tho' the Year was then but about 11 Minutes too long, whereas the Sun, as they ſaid, enter'd in his Time (or 45 Years before the Birth of Jeſus Chriſt) into the Vernal Equinox, the 24th of *March*, it enter'd into it on the 21ſt, at the time of the *Nicene* Council, *Anno* 327, and on the 11th of *March* in 1582, in the Reign of Pope *Gregory* XIII, who obſerving it, ſuppreſs'd 10 Days of that Year, between the 4th and 15th of *October*, becauſe in that Space there were no Feſtivals nor Saints Days. And for fear that Poſterity ſhould relapſe into the ſame Error, which was a Point of Conſequence to the Equinoxes, that in time would have made an entire Revolution thro' all the Months of the Year, by ſuch Retrogradation, he order'd, that for the next three Centuries ſucceſſively, the *Biſſextile* Year

ſhould not be computed at their Expiration, but only at the End of the Fourth, from whence it comes, that there muſt be 400 *Gregorian* Years and three Days to equal 400 *Julian* Years.

I am oblig'd to M. *Du Puis*, ſaid *La Foret*, for having ſtarted this Subject of Converſation; for I had been a long time deſirous to know what was meant by the *Biſſextile* Year, by *Old* and *New Style*, and what was the real Cauſe of all thoſe Alterations. They would not be ſatisfy'd till I had at ſeveral times explain'd to them the Meaning of the Terms *Epact*, *Golden Number*, *Solar Cycle*, *Roman Indiction*, *Ides*, *Calends*, and every thing almoſt that is neceſſary to be known for the Compoſition of an Almanack. What they moſt wonder'd at was, when I aſſur'd them that the Sun, which to us ſeem'd ſo ſmall, is abſolutely bigger than the whole Earth. Really, ſaid *La Foret*, this is beyond Imagination, and I can't think that all the Stories told us of theſe things are any better than Dreams. *Du Puis*, who aggravated every Objection made by his Comrade, preſum'd to tell me, that I talk'd very much at random, becauſe I maintain'd the Truth of it; ſo that I was under a Neceſſity, tho' ſorely againſt the Grain, to proceed to ſome Eclairciſſements for their Satisfaction.

I CONFESS, ſaid I, that 'tis impoſſible to determine the exact Dimenſions of the Celeſtial Luminaries; and all that have pretended to it have been preſumptuous Impoſtors. The Inſtruments we make uſe of to meaſure the Parallax of the Sun, are too ſmall, and too ill divided, conſider-

ing

ing the prodigious Distance of that Planet from the Earth. I never yet saw an Astrolabe divided into Minutes, tho' it were necessary it should be divided into Seconds, and perhaps into smaller Parts, which is impossible, or it would be too large for the Purpose. And as a Proof how liable we are to be mistaken for want of it, the most exact Astronomers, who, not content with the Theory, have gone about to reduce this Query to Practice, have been so grosly deceiv'd, that the wide Difference of one Man's Opinion from another, is enough to bring the Understanding of those Men in question, who would palm their Conjectures upon the World for real Truths. *Tycho Brahe*, who seems to have made a Circuit round the Heavens, as *Christopher Columbus* did round the Earth, affirms, that the Sun is 139 times bigger than the Globe which we inhabit. *Copernicus* makes the Number to be 162; *Ptolemy*, 166; Father *Scheiner*, 434; *Wendelinus*, 4096: And one of my Tutors affirm'd it to be three Millions of times bigger than the Earth. Therefore we know nothing positively of its Bigness, but that 'tis much larger than this great Body, how big soever it appears to us, is a Certainty. For in the first Place, supposing it to be of equal Bigness with the Earth, 'tis evident that its Rays in their Passage over the exterior Parts of this Terrestrial Sphere, would leave a Cylinder of Obscurity beyond it, whose Sides would be parallel, so that the Planets, in their way thro' that Opaque, receiving no Light, and having none of their own, would be eclips'd. If the Sun was smaller than the Earth, its Rays, after having glanced over the Earth, would grow wider, and form a Cone

cut off by a Shadow, with its Baſis in the Firmament, and the Top on the Part of the Earth oppoſite to the Sun; the Conſequence of which is, that a ſtill greater part of the Heavens would be darken'd, and all the Planets there, as was juſt now obſerv'd, could give no Light. The only Planet that ever we ſee eclips'd is the Moon; it appears, therefore, that the Sun muſt be incomparably bigger than the Earth, becauſe its Rays, when they have paſs'd over this great Maſs, unite again a little above the Moon, where the Cone, form'd by the Shadow of the Earth, ends in a Point. To illuſtrate this Explanation, I made a Figure in the Sand.

I CONFESS, ſaid *Du Puis*, this is demonſtrative, as to the Cauſe; but as to the Effects you ſpeak of, or the Defects of the Planets, I can't comprehend it, for I always thought that Eclipſes were things uncommon and unnatural. On the contrary, I reply'd, there is nothing in them that is myſterious. The Planets are hard opaque Bodies, which bear a good Reſemblance to the Earth, and are by many People thought to be inhabited, for they give no Light but by Reflexion, after having receiv'd it from the Sun. For this Reaſon it is that we have no Eclipſe of the Moon, except when this Planet is riſing on the one hand, while the Sun is ſetting on the other, and when the Earth happens to interpoſe directly between them, and hinders their ſeeing each other Face to Face. But if the Sun, ſaid *La Foret*, be the Source of Light, how happens it that at certain times it loſes it? From whence come thoſe Eclipſes which are ſo alarming to the World, and what is it that reſtores its former Luſtre to it? As the Interpoſi-

tion

tion of the Earth, ſaid I, cauſes Eclipſes of the Moon, the Interpoſition of the Moon, in like manner, darkens the Sun; that is to ſay, as often as the Moon is in Conjunction with the Sun, and paſſes in a direct Line, betwixt it and the Earth, it does the Office of a Curtain, and conceals that glorious Planet from us; but this Privation can be of no long Continuance, becauſe of the different Motion of thoſe Bodies. The Circle which the Earth deſcribes about the Sun, is incomparably greater than that which the Moon deſcribes round the Earth; and whereas the former advances about 13 Degrees in a Day, the latter rids away little more than one in Winter, and not quite ſo much in Summer, ſo that they ſoon get clear of one another. What, ſaid *La Foret*, does the Earth go faſter at one Seaſon, than at another? Yes, ſaid I, in Appearance the Difference is about four Minutes, becauſe the Earth being much farther from the Sun in Summer, than in Winter, it muſt neceſſarily ſeem to have a ſlower Motion during the long Days, than the ſhort ones; as a Waggon which is not above 50 Paces off, ſeems to go much faſter than when it is at the Diſtance of 500.

BUT, ſaid *Du Puis*, ſince you talk of Paces, is not the Heat of one and the ſame Fire better felt at the Diſtance of two Paces, than of ten? No doubt, ſaid I. Then if the Sun, which is a Body of Heat, reply'd he, is nearer the Earth in the Winter, than in Summer, how comes it that the Heat is not felt in proportion to its Diſtance, and what's the Reaſon that we ſhake with Cold at the ſame time one might expect to be in a melting Sweat?

You

You ſay very well, I reply'd, and this Objection ſhews that Ignorance and Reaſon are not incompatible; but while you think you have hamper'd me, you are quite miſtaken. I will not go about to prove to you, that there are no ſuch things in Nature as Heat, Cold, Light, Smell, Sound, or Colours, nor any of the Qualities which we perceive in Bodies; for it would be a Work of too much Trouble, and perhaps too you would not underſtand me, becauſe this depends on certain Points of Knowledge, of which you have not ſo much as the Principles. I will only obſerve to you, that properly ſpeaking, there is but one and the ſame ſort of Matter, which according as it's form'd or actuated, produces in us, by means of our Organs, certain Effects which we aſcribe to Bodies, and which therefore we call Hot, Cold, Luminous, Colour'd, and ſo of the others, tho' in effect Sound, Colour, Taſte, *&c.* are properly in us, and not in thoſe Bodies; as the Pain or Smart which proceeds from a Prick, is in our ſelves, and not at all in the Thorn which occaſion'd it. And to prove that your Compariſon is not juſt, even in the Senſe that you your ſelf would uſe it in, conſider, that the Top of the *Alpes*, which is ſo much nearer to the Sun than the Foot, is cover'd with Snow in the Summer, while the Valleys, which are ſo much farther from the Sun, are quite burnt up with Heat: The true Reaſon of which is, (that we may paſs over nothing without ſome ſlight Explanation) the Air, about a League from the Earth, is ſo thin, that it has not Strength enough to diſſipate the leaſt Bodies; whereas 'tis ſo groſs upon the Surface, that 'tis capable of

ſhaking,

shaking our most solid Parts, and to cause what we call excessive Heat.

ALL this is really fine, reply'd *La Foret*, but pardon me, if I tell you, that I don't see you have yet settled the Point, with respect to Summer and Winter. Very true, said I, that's a Question of another Nature. When the Sun is ascended towards our Zenith, as it does in Summer, tho' it be at a very great Distance from us, yet it emits a great Number of Rays, almost perpendicularly upon us; whereas in Winter, when it declines lower towards the Horizon, most of its Rays, which can only come sideways, reverberate upon the Surface of our Atmosphere, so that very few pass and penetrate to our Bodies: Mean time, Heat and Cold consist in the greater and lesser Number of those Rays, as is easily to be prov'd by Mirrors and Burning-Glasses, whose Effects are always proportion'd to the Number of Rays of Light which they collect.

DURING this agreeable Conversation, which was carry'd on with a View, rather to pass the Time, than to increase the Number of Philosophers, because in that Case another Course must have been taken, we had travell'd a good way, but at length we were oblig'd to turn to another Subject. It was now Thirty-five Days that we had left our Company, and we imagin'd that we could not have travell'd less than 130 Leagues, when on a sudden, we found our selves on the Brink of a Lake, which seem'd to be of a vast Extent. This Obstacle in our way so confounded us, that for a long time we knew not what to resolve upon. One talk'd of returning back, another of staying where we were for a few Days,

and

and making the beſt ſhift we could to lodge our ſelves; but at laſt we reſolv'd to go ſtraight along by the Side of this great Water, in hopes of finding the End of it. After coaſting it ſeven or eight Leagues, we began to ſee Land on the other ſide of it, and were overjoy'd to find that the farther we advanc'd we had ſtill a plainer View of the Objects on the other Shore; but then we had a freſh Mortification to ſee our ſelves got inſenſibly into a marſhy Place, where the Ground was not only ſoft, but ſtunk, and trembled under our Feet. All the Country about us was flat and even; we ſaw no end of it, and every Step we took, which way ſoever we turn'd, we ſunk in half way the Leg. All that I could ſay to encourage my Comrades, was in vain; there was no going further, ſo that we were fain to return back as we came, much againſt our Wills, and tho' extremely fatigu'd, were forc'd to travel two long Leagues before we durſt make a Halt, becauſe we were ſadly bemir'd, and had not yet met with any Fuel fit to make a Fire to dry us.

AFTER we had reſted our ſelves ſufficiently, we reſolv'd to turn ſtill to the Left, and to ſee if there was any Rub on that Side. We travell'd on four Days ſucceſſively, 'till we came to a Foreſt full of tall Oaks, of an extraordinary Bigneſs. We paus'd at firſt whether we ſhould enter it, and at length reſolv'd to venture into it, on condition of keeping as near as poſſible to the Lake; but this did not hold long, for we had ſcarce advanc'd three ſmall Leagues but we came to the Foot of a Mountain, ſo cragged, that it was impoſſible for any Creature to aſcend it. The Rock hung over the Lake, the Waters of which being ſome-

ſometimes ruffled, had in all Probability gradually waſh'd away the Bottom. We try'd to aſcend this Mountain on the other Side, for a whole Day, without finding any Place where it was acceſſible, becauſe of Precipices and aſtoniſhing Hills. At the diſmal Sight of ſo many invincible Obſtacles, our Patience left us, and my two Comrades reproach'd me very heartily for having brought them into this Diſaſter.

I CONFESS, ſaid I, that we have reaſon to bewail our unhappy Fate; but you ought to conſider that nothing happens by chance, for there is a Providence which directs every thing according to his own Pleaſure. As 'tis this ſame wiſe Being who has brought us hither, ſo he will not fail to hint ſome Means or other to extricate us. 'Tis moſt certain that God never abandons his People, let them go where they will; if we place our Confidence in him, he will infallibly aſſiſt us. You know that it was neither a View to Profit nor Honour that led us hither; we had nothing to loſe, and provided we eſcape with our Lives, we have all that we brought along with us. Let us not be daunted at what has happen'd to us hitherto; our principal Aim is to ramble in ſearch of new Things, which may give us Pleaſure; I don't deſpair of going farther ſtill, and that we ſhall ſome Day or other find out a way to get a comfortable Subſiſtence. Come on, my Lads, let us loſe no Time, ſaid I, but return back to the Lake, and ſee if we can't contrive how to paſs it, without running too great a Riſque. By good Fortune we have Hatchets, and here's Timber in abundance. If we venture over upon Floats, we ſhan't be the firſt Adventurers of this ſort, and if we

we are ſo happy as to get ſafe to the other Side, I flatter my ſelf we ſhall make more fortunate Diſcoveries. Hitherto the Country is uninhabited, but, humanely ſpeaking, 'tis impoſſible it ſhould be the ſame every where; and who knows but at laſt we may meet with ſome civiliz'd Nation, whoſe kind Treatment of us may make us ample Amends for the Fatigues and Dangers we have run thro' to find them out, and for telling them, if they don't know it already, that there are other People in the World beſides them.

MY Comrades turn'd a deaf Ear to me; nothing I ſaid could make 'em eaſy, and I am perſuaded, that if they had ſeen the leaſt Probability of finding our Ship's Company again, where we left them, they would undoubtedly have run all Hazards in queſt of them. In the mean time, there was a Neceſſity of reſolving upon ſomething. We return'd to the Lake, and view'd it well in many Parts, before we agreed what Place to put off at. Theſe Motions backwards and forwards took us up eight Days, and the ninth we began to ſet our Hands to the Work. Firſt, we cut down half a ſcore Trees, of ſeven or eight Inches Diameter, from which we ſtripp'd the Branches, ſhorten'd them to the length of twenty Foot, put them into the Water, and then faſten'd them together as well as we could, partly with Ruſhes, but chiefly with the Bark of Willow-Trees, which were very numerous on the Side of the Lake, and of which we made a ſort of Cordage, of what length we pleas'd. After this, we provided a Score of other ſhorter Trees, which we laid in a row, and bound a-croſs the former, and upon theſe we laid a third Floor of the ſame

Size

Size and Length as thoſe of the firſt Lay. We alſo made five Oars, or rather Shovels, which took us up more Time than all the reſt.

BEFORE we had finiſh'd our Carpenter's Work, *La Foret* came and told us, that at ſixty Paces diſtance he ſaw ſomething ſtir in the Ruſhes, which were not very far from the Lake, and in ſhort, we were of his Opinion immediately, that it muſt be ſome great Animal. *Du Puis*, and I, took each our Gun, and charging with four Balls, we fir'd both at once, reſerving a third Charge in caſe of Neceſſity, as we had been taught to do by Experience in our Travels, wherein we had like to have been torn to Pieces by Bears, two or three times, becauſe we had ſpent all our Fire at once. Our Pieces were ſcarce diſcharg'd, when we were extremely ſurpris'd and terrify'd with a hideous Howling, and prodigious Ruſtle among the Reeds, ſo that we were a long time in Suſpence, whether we ſhould go near to ſee what it was; but upon conſideration that what we heard and ſaw could be nothing elſe, in all probability, but the Effect of a mortal Wound, which had diſabled the Beaſt from defending himſelf, we charg'd our Pieces again, and approach'd, tho' with great Fear and Trembling, to the Place where he made ſuch a Stir. As ſoon as he perceiv'd us, he made a greater Noiſe than before, and ſtruggled hard to eſcape, which Fear of his rais'd our Spirits, and *La Foret* ſeeing him lift up his Head, let fly at him ſo dexterouſly that he ſhot him thro' and thro', and laid him flat on the Ground. Nevertheleſs, we durſt

not

not approach him for ſome Moments, but perceiving he had no Motion, we began to touch him with the Ends of our Pieces, and at length dragg'd him out, when we found him to be of the Otter Kind, with two very ſhort Legs before, which either *Du Puis* or I maim'd at the firſt Diſcharge, whereby he was diſabled from getting away. This Creature could not weigh leſs than 150 Pound. We skinn'd him, roaſted the beſt Part of him, and found his Fleſh to be good, and that it taſted not much unlike our Ducks.

NEXT Day, which was the thirteenth ſince we arrived there, we reſolv'd to put off, but our Float was ſo heavy that we made very little way; and two of us conſtantly ply'd the Oars by turns, while the third reſted. As good Luck would have it, the Weather was very favourable, and the Seaſon exceeding pleaſant, ſo that I can truly ſay, we were very much delighted in the Voyage, tho' we did not know what would become of us when we undertook it. 'Twas ſurpriſing to ſee the infinite Shoals of Fiſh in this fine Lake, leaping and daſhing on both ſides of our Float, which ſome of them follow'd with their Heads above Water, and playing with their Tails, as if they had been rejoic'd to ſee us. We were ſo attentive at this dumb Sport, that we lay upon our Oars ſometimes for a great while together to enjoy it. We took up ſeveral of them with our Hands, and then toſs'd them back again into their own Element, and might have caught what Number we had pleas'd. At the Cloſe of the Day, juſt as we loſt Sight of the Shore we came from, we were overjoy'd to diſcover that to which we were

ſteering

ſteering our Courſe. This agreeable Sight gave us freſh Spirits; we work'd luſtily almoſt all Night, and I think it was next Day about four of the Clock in the Afternoon, when we had the good Luck to touch Land. As ſoon as we got aſhore, we made uſe of all the Tackle we had to moor our Machine, not only to great Stones upon the Strand, but to a Poſt or Stump of a Tree, which we drove into the Ground, and which we carry'd with us for that purpoſe, being uncertain whether we ſhould fare better elſewhere, and whether we ſhould not be oblig'd to come back again the ſame way. We were ſo fatigu'd with our Voyage, that we took up our Lodging at the diſtance of an hundred Paces, and ſtay'd there till next Morning, when we continu'd our Journey.

WE had not travell'd half a League but we came to a Wood, as thick as any we had yet met with, tho' we forc'd our way thro' it in leſs than two Hours. But there we were ſtopt all on a ſudden, by ſteep Rocks altogether as difficult to aſcend as a Wall. This new Barrier occaſion'd freſh wrangling betwixt us; my Comrades murmur'd ſadly, and I, as uſual, did all I could to hearten them, ſo that I was forc'd at laſt to aſſure them, that tho' my Ideas were commonly ſo confus'd and irregular in my Slumbers, that I could ſeldom tell what to make of my Dreams, yet I had one laſt Night, the Connexion and Circumſtances of which were ſo particular, that it was an infallible Preſage of ſomething to our Advantage; and thereupon I invented ſome Fictions *extempore*, which, tho' perhaps not very well concerted,

certed, had however all the Effect I expected from them. In the Morning, said I, about an Hour before Sun-rise, methoughts I heard a Rumbling, like the Voice of Thunder, which said to me, *What have you to do there, Child? Rise up, and walk, thy Deliverance is near at hand.* At the same time a young Woman appear'd to me with a smiling Countenance, dress'd in white Raiment, with her dishevell'd Hair flowing about her Shoulders, her Legs bare even to the Knee, and in her Hands a little Basket of fine Ozier, artfully interwoven with all manner of fragrant Flowers, and full of uncommon delicious Fruits, of which she invited me to eat. On my left Hand there appear'd a Field, cover'd all over with Sheaves of the finest Corn that the Earth ever bore; and on my right a Tree, in the Trunk of which there was a Cleft, from whence there gush'd a clear beautiful red Liquor, which smelt like Musk. I turn'd about to look behind me, and perceiving a frightful Monster, bristled all over like a Porcupine, I was so affrighted at it, that tho' it turn'd its Back upon me, I started out of my Sleep. To this Dream I gave a favourable Interpretation, which contributed not a little to quicken our Pace.

AS we still kept along the East side of those Mountains, we at last discover'd a narrow Passage, which we resolv'd to climb, but the Difficulty we met with before we got up to the Top, was such that I cannot express it. When we had conquer'd it, we sat down to recover Breath, and take a little Food. Soon after we rose again, we perceiv'd a Pond about a Quarter of a League in Circum-

Circumference, which was bounded on one ſide by the craggy Points of a Rock, which hung over the Water, and on the other by a very narrow rugged ſort of Dyke, with a Precipice on the right hand, of which there was no diſcovering the Bottom. Theſe ſhocking Objects made me as mute as a Fiſh; I had neither the Strength nor Courage to ſpeak, and to be frank, I wiſh'd then with all my Heart I had never undertaken the Voyage. There was no Proſpect of going down the way that we aſcended, and the Danger of going farther was very great.

WHILE we were at that Nonplus, I made a hard Struggle to climb to the Top of a Rock which was behind us; as ſoon as I was got up to it, my Sorrow was turn'd on a ſudden into extravagant Joy, at the Diſcovery of a fine Champain Country beyond theſe Hills, which was interſpers'd with Canals, and Trees regularly planted on the Banks of them. I thought likewiſe that I ſaw Cattle grazing in the Meads, and at a further diſtance great Bodies, which I took to be the Habitations of Men. I beckon'd to my Comrades to follow me, and ſignify'd to them by my Geſtures and various Contorſions of Body, that our Deliverance was nigh. They were ſo fond to know the good News, that they ventur'd after me, tho' they had like to have broke their Necks as well as I; but then, on the other hand, they were ſoon ſatisfy'd for their Pains, and agreed that this Country was, without Diſpute, inhabited. All the Difficulty was how to come at it, a Difficulty, which we verily thought inſurmountable. From this Eminence we carefully ſurvey'd

ſurvey'd all the Country round; but there being no Appearance of Acceſs to it, we help'd one another down, and took another View of the Precipice and Pond.

FOR my part, I was immediately of Opinion let the Danger be what it wou'd, that we ought to return and cut down Timber in the Foreſt where we had ſpent the Night, and to draw it up in the beſt manner we could, in order to venture this ſhort Paſſage over the Pond. But *Du Puis* thinking my Propoſal impracticable, ſaid, that the Paſſage between the Lake and the Precipice ſeem'd to be only two Foot broad in the narroweſt Parts of it, that therefore one might eaſily croſs over it, and that he would undertake to be our Guide. I was wonderfully pleas'd with his Motion, and did not fail to ſecond it by inſtancing in the *Pyrenees* and *Alpes*, of which I had read ſomething in the Memoirs of ſeveral Travellers; but *La Foret*, who was, as he ſaid, ſubject to Vertigoes, proteſted he would not go that way, whatever was the Conſequence, but that if we were reſolv'd to paſs it, he would rather do it by Swimming. *Du Puis* immediately acquieſc'd, and engag'd to carry his Clothes, and mine too, if I would take to the Water with him. No ſooner ſaid, but done, for *LaForet* and I ſtripp'd, bundled up our Clothes, and *Du Puis* taking them along with him, ſet out. We reſolv'd to leave our Hatchets and Fowling-Pieces behind us, which indeed were of no more Service to us, becauſe we had not three Charges of Powder left; nevertheleſs, *Du Puis* was to return to fetch them, if he found the Paſſage not ſo dangerous as we imagin'd.

gin'd. *La Foret* and I being both very good Swimmers, we arriv'd quickly at the other Shore, becauſe we made choice of the narroweſt Place; but *Du Puis*, who had taken our Clothes, was oblig'd to take a large Compaſs, before he came to the Place where he was to paſs.

AS ſoon as we got aſhore, we ran to meet him, and glad we were to ſee him briskly advancing to us. But by an unaccountable Diſaſter, which I ſhall lament as long as I live, the poor Man was within ten Paces of being upon *Terra Firma*, when a Piece of the Rock giving way all on a ſudden under his Feet, he cry'd out, *Lord have Mercy upon me!* and, and to our Aſtoniſhment, diſappear'd in an Inſtant. We ran haſtily to ſee what became of him, but alas! we neither ſaw nor heard him more.

I BEG the kind Reader to pauſe here for a Moment, and ſeriouſly to reflect upon our Misfortune. Our inconceivable Grief for the Loſs of our Friend, together with the pitiful Condition he left us in, having neither Clothes to cover our Nakedneſs, nor any Means poſſible to ſubſiſt us, ſo diſpirited us, that we thought a hundred times of caſting our ſelves headlong after him, and by that means to have put a ſudden Period to the fatal Courſe of our unfortunate Lives.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Discovery of a very fine Country, its Inhabitants, their Language, Manners and Customs, &c. and of the Esteem which our Author and his Comrade gain'd there.

MEAN time, the Sun was at the End of his Race, and we found our selves very cold, which were two pressing Motives to induce us to betake our selves to some Shelter. We descended the Mountain with no great Difficulty, because on that side it was not very steep. At the Foot of it was a broad deep Ditch, where we were again forc'd to swim over. This was one of the Barriers of the Country, and was destitute of Bridges, so that People could neither pass in nor out of it.

THE farther we went into the Country, the more of its Beauties we discover'd, and a thousand things occur'd to convince us that it was inhabited. The Creatures which we spy'd, as we thought, from the Mountains, were Goats feeding in the Meadows, where the green Herbage was so high, that it partly conceal'd them from our Sight. In short, we were not a great way from one of the Herds, when the Man that look'd after them, who was then lain down upon the Grass, observing that they stretch'd out their Necks as if they spy'd something that had affrighted them, rose up to see what it was, and as soon as he perceiv'd us, ran away with all the Speed he could; and we heard afterwards, that seeing two such

ſuch naked Men coming down the Mountain in the Evening, he took us for Savages: His Goats alſo ran as if they had been purſu'd by ſome Beaſt of Prey. Certain Shepherds who were not far off, tending their Flocks of Sheep, knew not what to think of this Alarm, but they had the Courage to join one another, and came ſeven or eight in a Body to examine us. As ſoon as we thought they could ſee us, we wrung our Hands, and endeavour'd by all the Signs we could think of, to move them to Compaſſion. They advanc'd, and perceiving that we were naked and unarm'd, came within four Paces of us, each having a great Stick in his Hand, and fell a talking to us. I told them in *Latin*, in *French*, and in *Portugueſe*, a Language which I underſtood pretty well, conſidering the Time I was in *Portugal*, that we were two honeſt *Europeans*, who believ'd in God, and at the ſame time lifted up my Hands to Heaven, and then ſmote my Breaſt. But notwithſtanding all my various Looks and Actions, I plainly perceiv'd by their Countenances, that they underſtood us no more than we did them; upon which I fell proſtrate at their Feet, and by trembling, and extending my Arms, endeavour'd to give them to underſtand that I was almoſt ſtarv'd to Death with Cold. Then they talk'd with one another a few Moments, but without giving the leaſt Indication that they intended us any Harm, and at length, after ſome Deliberation, they beckon'd to us to follow them, and carry'd us to a venerable Perſonage, who, after having ſurvey'd us, firſt gave each of us a great Robe, which cover'd us from Head to Foot, for at the

Top of it a Cap was faſten'd, in the manner of a Monk's Cowl; then he interrogated us by Signs from whence we came, whether from the Eaſt, the Weſt, or from any other Part of the Globe. We anſwer'd him in our own Language, and by the beſt Signs we were capable of making, that we were neither Angels nor Devils; that we came neither from Heaven nor Hell; that we were rational Creatures like himſelf, who having put to Sea in a great Machine of Wood, were caſt away about 150 Leagues off; that of all the Crew only three of us ſet out in queſt of ſome Aſylum to paſs the Remainder of our Days; but that we loſt one of our Companions by the way, in the moſt tragical manner that could be; and ſo of the reſt. Then we begg'd him to take Pity of us, to put us to work, and to give us Nouriſhment. Tho' I knew not whether he underſtood what we ſaid to him, yet he ſeem'd to be affected, by his ſhedding of Tears. He gave us a Supper, and in an Hour after we were carry'd to a Bed, which was all done in ſo handſome a manner, that we were charm'd with our Entertainment. Next Day it was as good as a Comedy to ſee the Crowds of People that came from all Parts to gaze at us. Every one look'd upon us with Amazement, becauſe no body could comprehend from whence or which way we came hither. Theſe Viſits held at leaſt a Fortnight or three Weeks. By hearing them talk much, we began to underſtand ſome Words of their Language: The firſt we retain'd was the Word *Mula*, which they ſeldom fail'd to pronounce, when with our Eyes or Hands lifted up to Heaven, we utter'd the Name

of God. We learnt the Terms, *At*, to Eat; *Bouskin*, to Drink; *Kapan*, to Sleep; *Pryn*, to Walk; *Tian*, to Work; *Touto*, Yes; *Touton*, No; and a great many others, which we found afterwards to bear the same Meaning as we imagin'd they had at first. What very much contributed to make this Language familiar to us, was there being but three Tenses in the Indicative Mood of every Verb, *viz.* the *Present*, the *Præterperfect*, indefinite or compound, and the *Future*; that they have no *Imperative* Mood; that in their *Subjunctive* they have only the *Præterimperfect* and *Præterpluperfect*; and that besides these they have only the *Infinitive Mood* and *Participle*. They have also but three *Persons* in both the *Singular* and *Plural Numbers*; and thus, for Instance, they conjugate the Verb *At:*

Indicative Mood, Present Tense.

Ata, I eat or We eat.
Até, Thou eatest, You eat.
Atn, He eateth, They eat.

Præterperfect Tense.

Atài, I have eaten, We have eaten.
Atéi, Thou hast eaten, You have eaten.
Atin, He has eaten, They have eaten.

Future Tense.

Atàio, I shall or will eat, We will eat.
Atéio, Thou wilt eat, You will eat.
Atnio, He will eat, They will eat.

Infinitive Mood.

At, / To eat.

Præterimperfect Tenſe of the Subjunctive Mood.

Atàin, I would eat, We would eat.
Atéin, Thou would'ſt eat, Ye would eat.
Atnin, He would eat, They would eat.

Præterpluperfect.

Ataif, I would have eaten, We would have eaten.
Ateif, Thou would'ſt have eaten, You would have eaten.
Atnif, He or ſhe ſhould have eaten, They would have eaten.

Participle of the Preſent Tenſe.

Atain, Eating.

FROM thence are deriv'd the Words, *Ataus*, Kitchen; *Ataiʒs*, Food; *Atiʒ*, Cook; *Atians*, Eater, or the Perſon that Eateth.

THEIR Alphabet conſiſts of Twenty Characters, *viz.* Seven Vowels, *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*, *n*, *ʒ*, (the Sixth of which is properly the *Aita* of the *Greeks*, and the Seventh is equivalent to the Dipthongue, *ou*) and Thirteen Conſonants, *b*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *h*, *k*, *l*, *m*, *n*, *p*, *r*, *ſ*, *t*. Theſe ſame Conſonants ſerve them alſo for Numerals; as *b*, 1; *d*, 2; *f*, 3; *g*, 4; *h*, 5; *k*, 6; *l*, 7; *m*, 8; *n*, 9; *p*, 10; *pb*, 11; *pd*, 12; &c *dp*, is equivalent to twice Ten, or Twenty; *fp*, to thrice Ten, or Thirty; *fb*, 31; &c. *pp*, ten times Ten, or 100; *r*, 1000; *pr*, 10000; *ppr*, 100000; *ſ*, a Million; *ps*, 10 Millions;

Millions; *pps*, 100 Millions; *ppps*, 1000 Millions; and so on, always adding one *p* more.

IT must likewise be observed, that their Nouns and Verbs are deriv'd from one another, like the French, *Chat*, a Boar Cat; *Chate*, a She Cat; *Chatons*, Kittlings; *Chatonner*, to Kitten. Their Declensions are also very easy, of which this is an Example:

Nom. *Brol*,
Gen. *Brul*, } A Weather.
Dat. *Brel*,

Nom. *Brolu*,
Gen. *Brula*, } An Ewe or Sheep.
Dat. *Brèla*,

Nom. *Broln*,
Gen. *Bruln*, } Weathers or Sheep.
Dat. *Breln*,

'TIS wonderful, that there is not one Exception in the Conjugations and Declensions of this Language; and that when we know the Variations of one Verb or Noun, it leads to the Knowledge of all the rest; which Variation consists only in adding the Letter *A* to the Infinitive Mood, to make the Present Tense of the Indicative; as from *At*, comes *Ata*; from *Bæskin*, *Bæskina*, &c. And to the Nouns they add *A*, to the Nominative Case of the Masculine Gender, to make them Feminine in *u* when they change them to the Plural Number, as is plain from the foregoing Example. From hence it will not be thought strange, that at the End of six Months we under-

ſtood every thing they ſaid to us; and that they alſo underſtood what we ſaid to them. But to return to our former Subject.

NOT many Days after our Arrival, we were awaken'd one Morning by an extraordinary Hurly-burly in the Houſe. We aroſe to ſee what was the matter; but tho' we obſerv'd the minuteſt of their Proceedings, we could not conceive the Meaning of the Hurry they were all in from the the Higheſt to the Loweſt; only we gueſs'd there was to be a grand Dinner, becauſe there was a great Slaughter of Fowls, and abundance of Meat in the Kitchen. About Ten of the Clock, the whole Family went out. Our Patron march'd firſt, with a great Cock under his Arm, and we follow'd with the reſt of the Houſhold. As we paſs'd the Bridge over the Canal, we ſaw that all our Neighbours did the ſame, every Family marching out with a Cock. Our oppoſite Neighbour expos'd his Cock againſt ours; and the others did the ſame thing, it being a general Cock-match between the People of both ſides the Canal. It is incredible with what Courage and Fury, with what Vigor and Skill theſe Creatures fought. My Landlord, whoſe Cock was kill'd, went and took the Victor by the Hand, congratulated him on his Conqueſt, and carry'd him to his Houſe, follow'd by all his Children and Domeſtics. The Proviſions laid in at the other's Houſe, were brought to ours. We ſat down to Table, and I can ſay, that I had not been at ſuch an Entertainment a long while. It was a Feaſt truly Royal, and we drank to a very hearty Pitch; but the worſt on't was, we did not underſtand them.

OUR

OUR People were every whit as alert next Day. As ſoon as the Sun was riſen, all the young Men of the Canton, that is to ſay, the eldeſt Son of every Family, went out and took a ſtraight Pole, like to the Maſt of a Ship, which they planted in the middle of the Canal, and to the End of it they ty'd as many great Ropes as there were Families preſent. All theſe Ropes were afterwards extended, and wound about the ſeveral Trees which were planted on the Bank of the Canal; and that there might be no Jealouſy, or any Cauſe of Complaint, there was a Nooſe made in each Rope, all at the ſame Diſtance from the Pole. To the Top of this Pole, which was not Thirty Foot from the Surface of the Water, a round Board was nail'd, upon which an Eagle was plac'd, whoſe two Feet were faſten'd ſeparately with ſtrong Packthread, to two Cramp-Irons drove into the Timber.

WHEN every thing was ready, each of the young Men laid hold of one of the Ropes at the Place where the Nooſe was, and at the firſt Signal, which was given by our Landlord, they ſtrove who could climb up faſteſt. They that came firſt up to the Eagle, endeavour'd to lay hold of him, but they had a ſmart Reception, for as their Hands were oblig'd to be bare, they were expos'd to the Strokes of the Eagle's Beak, which made them all over bloody. Beſides, each Man had but one Hand at liberty to attack, becauſe with the other he was oblig"d to hold faſt. And then, the Eagle was not ty'd ſo ſhort, but that he could riſe at leaſt two Foot from his Board; ſo that whereas I thought at the Beginning, the Battle would have

been over in a Trice, when it had continu'd two Hours 'twas like to hold all Day. Notwithſtanding the Vigour of the Aſſailants, their Situation was too fatiguing, and it was impoſſible they could keep it long. Some reſted themſelves as well as they could; others dropped into the Water, where they were reliev'd immediately by Perſons who were underneath in little Boats, on purpoſe to catch them. In ſhort, it was a wild Skirmiſh; but I think they had been engag'd about ſix Hours, when one of the Aſſailants nimbly ſeizing the Eagle, broke one of its Legs, but another puſhing him, made him let go his Prize for fear of falling off of the Rope, grip'd the Bird with both his Hands, flung himſelf deſperately down the Rope, and fell, with the diſmember'd Prey in his Arms, into the Water. At his Fall, the Spectators ſhouted as much for Joy, as if the Safety of the Publick had been the Matter in queſtion. Thoſe who were wet went to ſhift their Clothes, and ſoon after repair'd to the Victor's Houſe, where every one paid him their Compliments. There they ſupp'd together, and ſpent part of the Night in Merriment, while the Parents of the Family treated one another reciprocally with hearty good Cheer. The third Day was ſpent in Plays, Dances, Races, and agreeable Diverſions.

WE knew not what all this meant; but afterwards we found that they obſerv'd the ſame Ceremonies throughout the Kingdom, every Year, at the Full Moon preceding the Solſtice of *Capricorn*, and that the young Man who carries off the Eagle, has that Year the Choice of all the Girls

Girls in the Canton, in case he has a mind to alter his Condition, so that there can be no Marriage without his Consent, which however he seldom refuses; and therefore it may be said, that it all terminates in a meer Formality and Punctilio of Honour to the Conqueror. At all the other Full-Moons of the Year, without Exception, they fight Cocks. They take their Pleasure in Gondola's, during the Summer; and in the Winter they are drawn upon the Snow in Sleds. For two Days they take all the innocent Pleasures they are capable of, except that of the Eagle planted on the Pole. The rest of the Month every body is at their Business, and there are no other Feasts at all.

HAVING spent all this Time without putting our Hands to any thing, we gave our Patron to understand that we should be glad of some Business. At first they pretended not to give ear to us; but seeing that we insisted on being employ'd, they gave us Wool to cleanse, wash, beat, and card, as thinking that we were fit for nothing else. We were soon weary of this Work. *La Foret*, who was by Profession a Watchmaker, wanted to take a File in his Hand, and to work on the Movement of a Watch; but there were no such Machines in those Parts, and it would have been difficult to have given them a Notion of such presently. When they perceiv'd our Dissatisfaction, they were willing to make use of us for the Rigging of a little Fleet.

THERE being Twenty-two Houses in our Canton or Village, of which I shall give a Description hereafter, the Number of Vessels to be

equipp'd was the ſame. Every Maſter of a Family caus'd his Veſſel to be fitted, and the neceſſary Proviſions to be put on Board, to ſerve four Perſons for three Weeks. In theſe Veſſels they put all manner of Proviſions or Merchandiſe which they knew to be proper for a Voyage; as for Inſtance, Cordage, Pullies, Wheelbarrows, Hatchets, Spades, Mattocks, Pick-Axes, and other Tools fit to turn up the Ground; but eſpecially Robes, and other Habits, Woollen and Linen. It was then the Month of *December*, and by conſequence in the Heart of Summer, and in the fineſt Seaſon of the Year. As the Goats are extremely large in that Country, and as ſtrong as our Horſes, they are generally made uſe of for Carriages. There were four of 'em to every Boat, of which two drew for two Hours, while the others eat, and reſted in the Veſſel. Thus they work'd alternately for fifteen or ſixteen Hours every Day, which was in a manner from Sun-riſe to Sun-ſet, but at Night there was a Halt, and a general Reſt.

MY Comrade and I could never ſee enough of the Beauties of this inchanting Country, and the Riches of its Soil. Their Orchards were adorn'd with fine Trees, ſome in Bloſſom, and others with ripe Fruit, the moſt excellent in the World; their Arable Lands were cover'd with Wheat, Barley, and other Grain; their Paſtures were full of Goats and Sheep, of an extraordinary Size (for as to Horſes and Cows, I never ſaw any there) and every thing was in ſuch Elegance, Order, and Regularity, that it perfectly charm'd us.

THE

THE whole Country, which, as we were afterwards inform'd, extends 130 *French* Leagues, from East to West, and 80 at least from North to South, is divided into Cantons or Villages. These Cantons are exactly of the Form of a Quadrangle, each Side being 1500 Paces, or an *Italian* Mile and Half in length, incompass'd all round, and separated from one another by a Canal 20 Paces broad, and a Royal Road on each side of it of 25 Paces, with two Rows of Trees in the middle, which form a Walk of 25 Foot, or five Geometrical Paces, that there may be free and commodious Passage for the Creatures employ'd to draw the Boats.

EVERY Canton is also divided in the middle by a Ditch of 20 Paces, and by a Road on both sides, of 25; with Trees planted after the same manner. Every one of these Roads contains 11 Habitations in length, each being 130 Geometrical Paces in Front, and about 700 in Depth, which are also separated by little Ditches five Foot over. At the Head of every one of these Habitations, on the Side of the Ditch which divides the Village into two equal Parts, there's a House only one Story high, but 60 Foot wide, with a Passage in the middle, which leads to all the Apartments, Stables, Barns, and other Offices. The Reason why they have no Upper Rooms is, because sometimes, tho' very seldom, they are subject to violent high Winds, which throw down their Houses to the Ground, for their Buildings are but slight.

FROM this Disposition that I have now describ'd, tis plain that in one Canton there are 22 Habitations, or Houses, opposite to one another, and

and all of the same Height and Breadth, 11 on one side of the Canal, and 11 on the other. At each End of this Water, on both Sides, there are Bridges to pass from one Village to the other, besides some in the middle of each Canton, which are all built of Free-Stone of fine Architecture, and kept in very good Repair. In these Twenty-two Families, there were always two of Distinction; one, that of the *Papa* or Priest; and the other, that of the *Kini*, or Judge of the Canton, which face the middle Bridge, and are opposite to one another; and behind these Houses there's an Apartment the breadth of the whole House, which serve the one for the Church, the other for the Court or Senate. But we shall have occasion to treat more of this perhaps elsewhere, and therefore we return now to our Journey.

WE stay'd nine Days upon the Road, and when we came within seven or eight Leagues from the Place to which we were bound, we began to discover the Highlands, where we saw nothing scarce but Mountains, whose Tops seem'd to touch the Clouds, and dazzled our Eyes with the Whiteness of the Snow, with which they are cover'd all the Year round. The Canal where we were, ended about two short Leagues from those Hills, so that there we were oblig'd to halt. Part of our Company stay'd there in the Boats, and the rest of us made our way to the Mountains. But before we came to them, we were fain to pass thro' a very beautiful Forest.

THE perpetual Din and Clatter which we heard as we went on, made me think more than once of *Vulcan* and his Cyclops. The Air re-

sounded

ſounded with great Strokes of Hammers, and one would actually have ſworn that we were but three Paces from the Forges of Mount *Gibel*, or the Anvils of *Brontes*, *Pyracmon*, and *Steropes*. We were not vaſtly miſtaken in our Conjecture, for the Men whom we diſcover'd ſoon after were not much unlike Giants and Dæmons; ſome of them were monſtrouſly tall, others as ſhagged as Bears, and not one but was blacker than a *Newcaſtle* Collier.

SOME of our Company immediately apply'd to a Director, and told him what Canton we were come from, what ſort of Merchandiſe we had brought, and what we came for in exchange. Then they preſented me and my Comrade to him, which we believed was to deſire him to conduct us to all thoſe Places which he thought worth ſeeing by People who had never been there; for he preſently gave Orders to one of his Footmen to accompany us wherever we went, and five of our Companions join'd us.

THE firſt thing he ſhew'd us was a large Pit, of a prodigious Depth, where was an Iron Mine which had been work'd for thouſands of Years, and from whence ſo much Earth, *&c.* had been dug as form'd ſeveral other Mountains near it. On the left ſide of this Pit was a Deſcent of Steps, which the Workmen had made in the Rock as they dug downwards, but tho' they were broad and eaſy, I did not care to go down them. Over it they had erected a wooden Machine, and a great Windlaſs, with a Pulley faſten'd to it three Foot in Diameter, which drew up the Oar, by means of Baskets that were fill'd by Men at the bottom,

bottom, as often as they were let down. On the right ſide of the Pit there was not a Hand at work, but every thing ſeem'd in Diſorder. Our Guide perceiving me ſtoop to view the confuſed State of it, made Signs to me, by which he gave me to underſtand, as well as he could, that not above five Months ago a great part of the Mountain, which had perhaps been undermin'd too far on that Side, broke away, and in the Fall cruſh'd 360 Labourers that were at work.

AFTER we had view'd that Place, he carry'd us to another, from whence Coal was extracted after the ſame manner; but 'tis much fatter than the *Engliſh* Coal, and even than that Mineral which is produc'd in the Country of *Liege*, for the Fire that is commonly made of it burns twenty-four Hours, without laying on freſh Coals.

BETWEEN theſe two Mines there was a Pond of Mineral Water, which continually bubbled up. They make uſe of it to ſcour their Bodies, Clothes, and Utenſils; but they can't dreſs their Victuals with it, 'tis ſo very ill-taſted. The Iron which they ſteep in this hot Water becomes impenetrably hard, and is much fitter than our Steel to make Springs of. I never was at a Loſs to account for the degree of Heat which is ſaid to be in the Mineral Waters of *Aix la Chapelle*, becauſe they come thro' long Subterranean Channels, where the Earth no doubt abounds with bituminous and ſulphureous Particles, which being themſelves much agitated, communicate a part of their Motion to them, as they paſs along; but here I really ſaw nothing like it. For this was a little Lake of ſtanding Water, which, as faſt as it

waſted

waſted by Exhalations, and what was drawn off by People for their Uſe, was ſupply'd by a Stone Pipe, which Nature ſeem'd to have form'd for the Purpoſe, from whence there came a Thread of Water as clear as Cryſtal, but colder than Marble; which made me think there muſt be a prodigious Fire of Spirits underneath to give it that Heat and Ferment.

WE went alſo to ſee the Men that ſeparated the Iron from the Mine, the Furnaces where they melted it, and the Forges where they extended it into Bars, to be work'd elſewhere; but all this was ſo like the Practice in *Europe*, that there's no need to deſcribe it here.

I UNDERSTOOD by what they told me afterwards, that this intire Chain of Mountains, which ſerves inſtead of a Barrier to this fine Country, is properly the Magazine from whence theſe People have great part of their Wealth, and things which are generally uſeful in Society; as Stones for Building, others for Lime; Salt, which, tho' different from ours, is very good; very fine Pewter, and red Copper, but in a very little Quantity, which at the ſame time coſts a great deal of Labour, and the Lives of very many Men.

WHILE I was taken up with viewing all theſe Curioſities, our People were buſy in landing their Goods, bartering them, and taking in their Ladings of ſuch Goods as they had Orders to bring away in exchange, which were carry'd off by Sledges, or little flat long Carts, drawn by two, three, four, and even ten Goats at a time, or on the Backs of Porters, and in which ſo many People were imploy'd, that they made quick Work

Work, tho' the Way was pretty long, ſo that we were not there two whole Days. We carry'd our Guide to our Barks, where we treated him in the beſt manner we could, and made him ſo drunk, that as he got up to go away, he fell all along and hurt his Shoulder, inſomuch that the exquiſite Pain he felt made him call out upon the Name of Chriſt. I was ſtartled at the Expreſſion, and ſhould have been glad to have known how he came to hear of the Saviour of Mankind, but for want of knowing the Language, I contented my ſelf with having raiſed him on his Legs again, and glad I was to ſee that he had not hurt himſelf dangerouſly.

JUST as we were unmooring in order to return, it came into my Head, that if inſtead of going back by the ſame Canal, we ſtruck into another two or three Cantons off, perhaps we ſhould ſee Novelties that would divert us, and make us amends for all our Time and Labour. I communicated my Mind to *La Foret*, and he join'd with me in perſuading the others, who were ſo complaiſant that they conſented to our Propoſal, without any Scruple. Thereupon we went Weſtward, but when the Goats were to be harneſs'd which were to draw our Boat, the oldeſt of 'em, which, according to the Report of the Driver, was Forty-two Years of Age, and had been that way I know not how often, finding that they did not keep in the uſual Track, was ſo unruly, that it was impoſſible for the Guide to hold him in. He made ſo many Leaps and Capers, that he broke the Rope with which he was harneſs'd, and run away. Twenty People immediately purſu'd him,

him, and call'd out to others to ſtop him, which, as one was attempting to do, the mad Creature leap'd fairly into the middle of the Water, at a Place where the Banks are very high and ſteep, ſo that he could not poſſibly climb out. Our Guide getting a little before him, ſtoop'd till he came by, and then throwing in a Rope with a Nooſe, caught him by the Horns. At the ſame time the Goat being affrighted, darted towards the other Shore, and whether the Rope was twin'd round the Body of our Guide, or whether he choſe to be dragg'd into the Water, rather than let go his Hold, I know not, but ſo it was that he fell in. The Company were immediately ſo alarm'd that they all hurry'd to his Aſſiſtance; and while they were buſy in helping him out, the Creature made up to one of the Steps of the next Bridge, by which he recover'd Land, and got quite out of our Sight, ſo that we knew not what was become of him. For my own part, I was heartily vex'd to loſe him, and wiſh'd almoſt that I had been Tongue-ty'd, ere I propos'd to come this way, for I was afraid that my Patron would look upon us with an evil Eye, and revenge himſelf upon thoſe who had been ſo complaiſant as to hearken to us. We purſued our Purpoſe, however, tho' ſome of the other Goats were reſty for a little while, but as ſoon as the foremoſt were in the Humour to go, the others follow'd as gently as Lambs. Yet we were never the better for this Voyage, for the Country is ſo uniform, that when you have ſeen a Part of it, 'tis as well as if you had ſeen the whole, there being really no remarkable Difference but in the People's Faces, the

ſame

ſame that you obſerve every where elſe; and indeed, if there had been any Pleaſure to have taſted, we were at that time too uneaſy to have partaken of it. But we were moſt agreeably ſurpriz'd at our Arrival, to hear that the Goat had been a Week in the Stables; ſo that this nimble Creature had ran home in Thirty-five Hours. This welcome News baniſh'd all melancholy, and made every one of us laugh very heartily.

THE next Day the Boats were unladen, in Preſence of all the Inhabitants of the Canto. The Judge having call'd for the Bill of Lading, and examin'd it, caus'd the Goods to be deliver'd to the reſpective Proprietors, with ſo much Order, that it was impoſſible for the leaſt Thing to be loſt. To make him amends for this Trouble, every Family ſends him next Day a Diſh of the beſt Fiſh they can catch in their Rivers, half of which is dreſs'd at his own Houſe, and the other half at the Prieſt's Apartment, whither the Parents of the Family go to take part of it. This is reckon'd an Honour for theſe Gentlemen, but they pay dearly for it, becauſe all that they can ſave of the Fiſh, is not worth one half of the Sauce, which they are oblig'd in Generoſity to add to it.

WHEN all was over, the next thing to be thought of was, to return to our Occupation; not that any Body gave us the leaſt Hint of it; for we perceiv'd on the contrary, that they did not care whether we meddled with any thing or not; but becauſe we hated ſauntering, tho' we had much rather have been imploy'd in any thing elſe. *La Foret*, who was even more tir'd than I with

the

the Woollen Manufacture, did all he could to make our Landlord underſtand, that as he was by Profeſſion a Clockmaker, if he would furniſh him with the Metals and the neceſſary Tools, he would make a Machine for him to ſhew the Time of the Day, and to ſtrike the Hour ſo as to be heard by all the Inhabitants of the Village. As for me, who could be of no Service to them in the Article of Surgery, becauſe the Herbs of that Country differ for moſt part from ours, and becauſe there are few Minerals, and that they mortally hate Bleeding, all that I had to do, was to applaud what my Comrade ſaid, in Hopes of being employ'd with him on the ſame Work.

THIS Propoſition ſeem'd very miraculous to the Judge, who immediately ſent for the Prieſt to impart it to him. They had heard Talk indeed of our Clocks, but not a Man of 'em had ever ſeen one, and the Idea they had form'd of 'em, was very confus'd; ſo that they were very preſſing with us, to ſet about one as ſoon as we pleas'd, and to ſpare no Coſt, the rather becauſe their way of dividing the Time was extremely troubleſome; for, they tie a Piece of Packthread to the Cieling, and at the End of it hang a Ball of Pewter three Foot and two Inches in length, which ſerves as a Pendulum, and putting it in Motion, they tell the Vibrations to the Number of 7200, which by reaſon of the length of the Cord, make juſt as many Seconds, and by conſequence the 12th part of a natural Day, or two of our Hours. I ſhall give an Account by and by, who they make uſe of to count theſe Vibrations, and to go and cry the Hour through the Village, as the Watchmen

men do by Night, in many Parts of *Europe*, and particularly in *England* and *Holland*, where they hire Men for the Purpoſe. They furniſh'd us therefore with the neceſſary Materials for our Work. *La Foret* beſpoke ſome of the Tools that we had need of, and himſelf made the others. At length we went to work, but we did not hurry ourſelves, for 'twas above a Year and half before we finiſh'd our Clock.

WHEN it was done, you can't imagine with what Admiration every Body ſtar'd at us. They could not conceive how it was poſſible for this Machine to go by itſelf, and to ſound all the Hours of the Day. Being by this time ſo perfect in the Language of the Country, that we explain'd ourſelves with as much Eaſe as in the *French*; we told them, that they ought to have a Tower built over the Houſe of the Prieſt or Judge, after the manner of the *Europeans*, and to put up the Clock in it that every Body might hear it ſtrike. No ſooner ſaid, but done, and all Hands were ſet to work to follow our Directions, till the Clock was hung up in the Place which we appointed for it.

BUT to return to the Perſons they make uſe of to take care of the Pendulums, and to give Notice to the People of the Time of the Day. You muſt know, that hitherto no Perſon in this Country was ever ſentenc'd to die. Crimes indeed are prohibited, and the Criminals puniſh'd, but not with Death; for they imagine, that as the Life of Man is in the Power only of God who gave it, 'tis not in Man's Power to take it away for any Cauſe whatſoever, not even for the Murder

of

of a Father or Mother. It was in vain to preach to them, that the putting of Criminals to Death for ſuch Capital Offences, was a Maxim obſerv'd by almoſt all Mankind, and expreſly commanded by our Law, of which we believe God himſelf was the Dictator; all this tended only to exaſperate them, and to give them an Abhorrence for People whom they knew not, and whom they thought unworthy to ſee the Light. 'Tis not likely, ſaid they, that a Man who kills another, is in his right Senſes, and it would be an Affront to the reſt of his Species to ſuppoſe it. But when we meet with Perſons ſo extravagant and cruel, as to deprive their Neighbour of a Life which they never gave him, we ought to leave the Revenge to the *Univerſal Spirit* (which is the Name they call God by) and not to incroach upon his Prerogatives by imitating their Barbarity, under the ſpecious Pretext of obſerving the Divine Laws, which in the main, ſay they, are but the Ordonnances of an unnatural Tyrant. In the Formation of Society, every Man may transfer the Right and Authority which Nature has given him over himſelf to another, as to his Prince or Sovereign, but he cannot give him any Power over his own Life. 'Tis God who thro' the Means of our Parents has made us without our Participation, and ſince we have not contributed to our own Exiſtence in any Manner whatſoever, 'tis but juſt and lawful to leave it to that ſame God to unmake us, and to content our ſelves with laying our Hands upon the other Creatures which he ſeems to have left to our Diſpoſal.

IN

IN conformity to theſe Principles, they only impoſe upon every Criminal that Puniſhment which they think moſt adequate to his Offence. Blaſphemy againſt God is with them the moſt enormous Sin, and thoſe who commit it, are without Mercy condemn'd to hard Labour as long as they live, in the Bottom of a dark Mine where the Light of the Sun cannot enter. Murderers, Adulterers, Fornicators and great Robbers are treated much after the ſame manner: Some work at the Bottom, others at the Top; ſome are condemn'd for 10 Years, others for more or leſs Time according as the Crime is aggravated, and to the Age and Underſtanding of the Offender. Peccadillos are not puniſh'd ſo ſeverely, thoſe who commit them being generally confin'd to the Village. Some are employ'd in fiſhing, and in making and mending of Nets, in which they have full Employment, becauſe their Rivers abound with Fiſh, and they eat great Quantities of them. Some take care of the Trees, and the Walks, and others cleanſe the Canals. The Women and Girls look after the Pendulums, being reliev'd every ſix Hours, and the Boys go about conſtantly to cry the Hour of the Day from the Time that the Sun comes to their Meridian to the Time it returns. And when they have done this for a certain Term, they are reſtor'd to their Liberty.

I SAID a while ago, that Blaſphemy is the Crime they puniſh with the greateſt Severity, which gives me Occaſion now to ſay two Words concerning the poor Man, our Guide to the Mines, who when he fell down, call'd out on the Name of *Chriſt*,

Chriſt, as it were for Help. When I found myſelf able to ſpeak their Language, I let no Opportunity ſlip of informing myſelf of the Things which I deſir'd to know. I told our Patron one Day the Circumſtances of the Journey we made to the Mountains, and when I mention'd the venerable Perſonage, and what he ſaid, I ask'd him, if they knew a *Chriſt* among them. He made me Anſwer, that about 300 or 400 Years ago, there came ſeveral People into their Country for much the ſame Reaſons that had brought us thither, that the laſt who came, was a grave Man dreſs'd in a long Robe in ſuch a manner, that it was natural for me to think he was a Monk of ſome mendicant Order. This Man, continued he, had Wit and Learning too; he came to a Canton not far from this, but did not ſtay here long. As ſoon as he underſtood a little of our Language, he often ſhifted his Village. My Grandfather, as I have heard my Father ſay, had lodg'd him here ſeveral times, and took a great deal of Pleaſure in hearing him talk. He was continually preaching up Morality, and diſcourſing of a Reſurrection, and happy Immortality after this Life. Moreover, he affirmed, that God had a Son ingender'd of his own Subſtance long before the World had a Being, who manifeſted himſelf to Mankind ſeveral Ages paſt, as born from a Virgin, or one who, if you pleaſe, had never known Man: That this God-Man convers'd with Mankind, that he ſuffer'd the Death of a Robber to procure eternal Life for the reſt of Men who ſhould be willing to embrace his Religion; and that this Perſon who was call'd *Chriſt*, roſe from the

the Dead, and ſitteth in Heaven at the Right Hand of God his Father, with him to govern Heaven and Earth till the End of the World. As this was very ſoothing Doctrine, the Monk found a great many People who were hugely delighted with what he ſaid, and others took Offence at it, which coming to the King's Ears, he was ſent for to Court, and after having been ſtrictly examin'd, was condemn'd like the worſt of Blaſphemers, to ſpend the reſt of his Days in the Bottom of a Mine, where, not long after, he died. And as he had the Name of *Chriſt* in his Mouth at every Turn, ſome that work'd with him, imitated him; and what you have now told me of your Guide, added he, is a certain Proof that the Doctrine has found its way to us.

THO' this Diſcourſe alarm'd me, I could not help telling him, that I was of the ſame Belief as that Man; that the Maxims of the Religion I profeſs'd, led me to it, and that I was ſurpriz'd to think that Perſons of their Wiſdom and Humanity could find in their Hearts to be ſo barbarous to a poor Friar, who no doubt was ſent to them by Heaven for their Salvation. Perhaps, ſaid my Landlord, it was owing in a great meaſure to State Policy. Princes don't love great Alterations in Worſhip, for fear their Perſons ſhould ſuffer by it, or that it ſhould be prejudicial to the Government. And then 'tis as ſure on the other hand, that your Sentiments are in many Reſpects contradictory, and that this *Chriſt* above all Things excites to Rebellion, and prodigiouſly embarraſſes humane Reaſon. I own, ſaid I, 'tis an incomprehenſible Myſtery, but we believe it; and we be-

believe it with the more Confidence and Steadineſs, becauſe we ſee it is for our Advantage to believe it, and that 'tis interwoven with the Oeconomy of Salvation; beſides its being a Truth of which a thouſand Eye-Witneſſes have given Evidence, and which has been reveal'd to us by God himſelf.

TO be ſure, ſaid the Judge, you were born in very happy Climates, ſince the Divinity communicates himſelf there in ſuch a manner to the Inhabitants; or rather, the People of your Country muſt be very vain and preſumptuous to have the Impudence to give it out in publick, that the univerſal Spirit condeſcends to become a private Man, and to a Familiarity with a Worm of this Earth. To me it ſeems intolerable, and if this ſame God was the leaſt concern'd for his own Honour, he would not fail to puniſh your Arrogance with Severity. But, before I engage farther with you in this Diſcourſe, pray tell me, ſaid he, how does this Revelation come? Does God ſpeak to you directly himſelf, does he employ Heaven, Earth, or any other Creature in revealing it to you, in what manner doth he do it?

I QUESTION, ſaid I, whether 'tis worth while to talk with you on this Subject; I perceive you are ſo wide from our Sentiments, and ſo little diſpos'd to give the leaſt Credit to our Doctrines, that I fear your Incredulity will ſtir up your Indignation, and bring me into ſome Trouble. You need fear nothing, reply'd he, I am your Friend, and a Man of Honour, and will allow you to ſay what you pleaſe, only I will not give up the Right of judging for myſelf. Upon

this Condition, ſaid I, I am willing to tell you as much as my Age, Education, and Buſineſs have ſuffer'd me to know of the Matter. But, for fear of rambling too far from the main Point, or leſt I ſhould entertain you with what you know better perhaps than I do, tell me if you pleaſe, firſt of all, what are your Sentiments of God, of the World, of Man, and of his Origin, as well as of his Dependence, and of what he ought to expect after this Life.

YOU ſay well, reply'd the old Gentleman, I am ready to ſatisfy you, as to my own particular, it being impoſſible that my Confeſſion ſhould be general, becauſe perhaps there are as many Minds as there are Men. I for my part believe an increated Subſtance, an univerſal Spirit, ſovereignly wiſe, and perfectly good and juſt, an independant and unchangeable Being, who made Heaven and Earth, and all Things that are therein, who governs and animates them, but in a Manner ſo ſecret, and ſo far above my Nothingneſs, that I have but a very imperfect Idea of it. And while we perceive the Neceſſity of his Exiſtence and our Dependence upon him, we think ourſelves under an indiſpenſable Obligation to pay him our Homage and Adoration, never to ſpeak of him but with Reſpect, nor ſo much as to think of him but with Trembling, which is one principal Part of our Worſhip; the other is continually to render him Thanks for all the Favours he has done us, without any Petition for Futurity, and much leſs for any thing beyond the Grave, becauſe then as our Exiſtence will be at an End, we ſhall have no more need of any thing whatſoever. And 'tis

for

for this Purpoſe that we meet every Morning at the Houſe of our Prieſt, which you have been Witneſs of many times ſince you came among us.

'TIS true, reply'd I, that you are very punctual in giving an Hour of your Devotion every Day in the Year to God, for which you are certainly very much to be commended; but I think it ſtrange, that you entirely reject Prayer, and make no Diſtinction of Days; for we employ ſix Days in our domeſtick Affairs, and devote the ſeventh to God, and the Exerciſes of our Religion.

WE don't think, reply'd he, that one Day is a Jot better than another. They are undoubtedly all alike, and though we are but one Hour in the Morning in our Churches, yet we don't fail to devote the reſt of the Day to God, to meditate every Moment upon his Greatneſs, and to admire his Goodneſs to all his Creatures. But as to Prayer, 'tis abſolutely needleſs, beſides the offering Violence as it were to his Nature, which being immutable, 'tis evident that he cannot ſuffer any Shadow of Change.

HERE Word was brought to the Judge, that the Τιμαι, that is to ſay, the Intendant or Governor was come to receive the Tribute of the Canton. We have already obſerv'd, that each Village conſiſts of 22 Families govern'd by a Bailiff. Ten of the Cantons form one Government, the eldeſt of whoſe Bailiffs is Τιμαι, and Preſident of the nine others in the Aſſemblies which are held for exerciſing Juſtice, and regulating the Police in thoſe ten Villages. Beſides this, there's

the Sovereign Court to which out of the ten Governors one is deputed once a Year to the Aſſembly which is held for at leaſt twenty Days. The King preſides in this illuſtrious and numerous Body, which takes care of the Rights of the Regale, and to which an Appeal may be made from all the other Tribunals, when the Puniſhment of any capital Crime is the chief thing in queſtion.

THE Intendant, who was come to receive the Gift of the People, was perfectly well receiv'd by our Landlord, and a magnificent Entertainment was made for him, to which the Prieſt and the two Aſſeſſors of the Village were alſo invited. During the Converſation, they did not forget to talk of Meſſieurs the Clockmakers. The Governor who had the Curioſity to ſee our Machine, admir'd the Invention of it, and ſaid a thouſand fine Things in praiſe of us; but it had been better for us that he had known nothing of the Matter, becauſe in the Sequel it did not turn out at all to our Advantage, as will be ſeen in its Place.

CHAP. VII.

A curious Converſation between the Author, the Judge, and the Prieſt of the Village concerning Religion.

AFTER the Governor was gone, the Judge who had not forgot our Converſation, was impatient to hear me talk of my Religion, and that

that he might have the fairer Opportunity, he invited the Prieſt next Day to Dinner for the Purpoſe, and ſent for me and my Comrade to be of the Party.

THE firſt thing that gave occaſion to the Prieſt to open the Diſcourſe, was our ſaying Grace before Meat. As I knew his Opinion, and had before talk'd of it to my Landlord, I only told him, that the Notion I had of God as a Being ſovereignly powerful, and perfectly good, inclin'd me to implore his Bleſſing on the Food which he gave me for the Nouriſhment of my Body, being convinc'd both from Reaſon and Experience, that his Word was infinitely more ſatisfying than Bread. He talk'd on this Subject much after the ſame Manner as the Judge did, and pretended to evade the Streſs of my Argument by inſtancing in his Countrymen, and even moſt Animals who are as much nouriſh'd with what they eat, as we who perform this Ceremony: So that the Drift of what he ſaid was the abſolute aboliſhing of Prayer. Let us not trouble our Heads to diſpute about it, ſaid I, 'tis a Queſtion that will reſolve itſelf ſoon, and only depends on ſome other Truths which I ſhall clearly demonſtrate to you.

IN the Converſation I had t'other Day with the Judge, he himſelf own'd to me, that you unanimouſly confeſs the Exiſtence of a God of all Perfection, which is a Truth that might be very eaſily prov'd to you by ſeveral undeniable Arguments, and eſpecially by that aſcrib'd to one St. *Thomas*, which he calls *cauſalitas cauſæ efficientis*, becauſe by it we infallibly trace Effects to

one firſt, intelligent, and neceſſary Cauſe of the Production of all Things.

I know it, ſaid the Prieſt, and a Man muſt be quite devoid of Reaſon ſo much as to doubt of it. Well then, reply'd I, 'tis clear that 'twas this ſame God, and no other who has created the Univerſe, that is to ſay, Heaven, Earth, and in general every thing that exiſts, out of nothing. As for that, ſaid the Judge, I don't well underſtand it, out of Nothing there comes Nothing. You are right, ſaid I, with regard to us; but as to God the Caſe is quite otherwiſe; there is no ſuppoſing of Matter coexiſtent with God, without a direct Contradiction; for then there would be two Infinite, two independent Beings, which 'tis preſum'd cannot be reconcil'd. But to have done with infinite Things which are out of our Reach, I think it ſufficient in the main to know that God has made all Things, and not puzzle ourſelves as to the Matter, Manner, and Time.

WE have a Book, I added, which tells us all this. *Moſes* aſſures us that God made every thing by his Word, about 6000 Years ago; and that after he had imploy'd Six Days in it, he reſted from his Labour. What did he do the firſt Day, reply'd the Judge? After having created the Heaven and the Earth, he ſaid, *Let there be Light, and there was Light*, &c. On the Sixth Day he created Man out of Clay, and breath'd into his Noſtrils the Breath of Life, &c. When he had endow'd him with Diſcernment, it was very juſt that he ſhould live in a Dependence upon him, and own him for the only Lord of the Univerſe. He gave him Power over all things on the Earth,

and

and only forbad him not to touch one ſingle Tree that was planted in the midſt of the delightful Garden in which Providence had plac'd him. The Submiſſion he ow'd to his Creator, would no doubt have conſtrain'd him from contravening his Orders; but the Woman which he gave him for a Companion, being the weaker Veſſel, and more inquiſitive than he was, indulg'd her Curioſity, took the admirable Fruit of this Tree into her Hand, taſted it, and found it ſo excellent, that ſhe gave it to her Husband, who was ſo unfortunate as to eat of it, and by conſequence incurr'd the Penalty that was impos'd on him of dying an everlaſting Death, that is to ſay, of ſuffering eternal Pains after his Death; a Puniſhment very harſh, and indeed cruel, conſidering the Offence, and the Perſon that committed it, but nevertheleſs very juſt, in conſideration of the Majeſty of the Being that was offended.

HAVING ran over the Hiſtory of the Creation, the Deluge, the Patriarchs, of *Moſes* and his Brother *Aaron*, and of the Miracles by which the Truth of this Hiſtory was confirm'd, I entertain'd them with an Account of the Prophets and their Predictions, eſpecially with regard to the Meſſiah; of our Saviour's coming into the World, how he was the Son of God, and by what means he redeem'd us from the Puniſhment we had deſerv'd in the Perſon of the Firſt Man, our Father. I ſhow'd them the Neceſſity of Prayer, as well from the Dictates of Nature, as from the Documents of holy Men, and in particular of Jeſus Chriſt. And, to conclude, I talk'd

to them of the Reſurrection of the Body, and its being repoſſeſs'd by the Soul, and of an everlaſting happy Life which the Son of God purchas'd for us, by ſuffering the ignominious Death of the Croſs.

I MUST own they heard me with a great deal of Patience, nay, they ſeem'd to be pleas'd, and to acquieſce in the greateſt part of what I ſaid. But I was very much ſurpris'd when the Prieſt ask'd me, with a very ſerious Countenance, whether I believ'd it all. Verily, ſaid I, I believe every Tittle of it. Thoſe who queſtion'd the Law of *Moſes*, dy'd without Mercy; and the Apoſtles aſſure us, that we cannot doubt of the Truth of Chriſt's Words, and the whole Oeconomy of Salvation, without danger of everlaſting Puniſhment. But that which is the Motive to my Belief, is not Force, but Evidence it ſelf. What would you think of me, continu'd I, if I told you exactly not only your moſt ſecret Tranſactions paſt, but what you will do hereafter, and what muſt happen to your Country? If I ſhould cure the Sick, raiſe the Dead to Life, paſs the Seas dryſhod, cleave the Rocks with a Rod, and bring Water enough out of them to quench the Thirſt of a whole Nation, and if I work'd a thouſand more ſuch Miracles? Would you not ſay, either that I was a God, or at leaſt an Inſtrument in the Hand of God, to work ſo many different Miracles, ſince all this is above the Power of Mortals? And yet, continu'd I, 'tis no more than what was done by the Prophets, the Apoſtles, and eſpecially by Jeſus Chriſt, as I

juſt

juſt now hinted; ſo that we have no reaſon to doubt of the Truth of what they have left us upon Record.

YOUR Conſequence is not juſt, ſaid the Prieſt. Pray, did you ſee all thoſe fine things? I own I did not, ſaid I; but the Sight of a Thing is not always neceſſary to the Belief of it. You never ſaw *Europe*, its Kingdoms, Wars, Religions, and Cuſtoms, yet you believe what we relate to you about it, becauſe you take us for honeſt Men, and becauſe two or three other Travellers before us inform'd your Anceſtors almoſt the ſame things. When a Fact is ſupported by the Teſtimony of ſeveral Perſons of Probity, there's no longer any Reaſon to call it in queſtion. Now the Facts of which I ſpeak to you, are not only confirm'd by a ſufficient Number of wiſe and good Men, but by Clouds of Witneſſes, by intire Nations, which we cannot poſſibly ſuſpect, becauſe the Worſhip of ſome of them is quite different from ours, and they are our mortal Enemies into the Bargain: Even the *Jews* know after what manner God appear'd to our Fathers, one while in Dreams, another while in a Burning Buſh, and that at other times he conducted them in the Form of a Cloud by Day, and a Pillar of Fire by Night, and ſtopp'd where they were to encamp in the Deſerts *, when he himſelf led them to the great Country,

* *I have heard of a learned* Engliſh *Gentleman, who lately publiſh'd a Diſſertation to prove that there's nothing miraculous, nor even extraordinary, in this Pil-*

Country, of which he had promis'd them the Poſſeſſion. Surely, after ſuch ſtrong Evidence, I think we ſhould be very much in the wrong to be Unbelievers.

TO be ingenuous with you, ſaid the Judge, there's ſomething in all this which is ſurpriſing, and which, tho' ſupernatural, yet appears very probable. Not ſo probable as you imagine, reply'd the Prieſt; you know how our Anceſtors were bubbled, much after the ſame manner, by the Craft and Violence of our former Kings. There's Parchment to write upon at all times, and the Puniſhments inflicted on thoſe who don't ſubſcribe to pretended Facts which are given out as Truths, force People to be ſilent, who would otherwiſe take a Pride in talking big. The Creation you was juſt now ſpeaking of, continued he, looking on me wiſtfully, is a meer Allegory, which I think very groſs of its kind, and form'd by an Author altogether ignorant of the Nature of things, inſomuch that he makes Effects

---

lar of Fire, by which the Iſraelites *were conducted into the Wilderneſs; and to ſhew them from the beſt Authors, ancient and modern, that it was always the Cuſtom in Deſerts of this kind, to make uſe of a Fire to direct Armies or Multitudes of People in their March, by cauſing it to be carry'd before them in ſuch a manner that the whole Company might ſee the Smoke by Day, and the Flame by Night. He pretends that the Perſon who had the Direction of this Fire, and ſerv'd as a Guide to the* Iſraelites, *was only* Hobab, *the Father-in-law of* Moſes; *which he endeavours to prove from the 29th and 30th Verſes of the Tenth Chapter of* Numbers; *and from many other Paſſages of the ſacred Scriptures.*

precede

precede the Cauſe; for, according to what you have ſaid, Light was created on the very firſt Day, and the Luminaries from whence that Light comes to us, not till the fourth. Beſides, 'tis certain that the Idea of a God who labours, and reſts from his Labour, is what cannot be digeſted by any, but very ſtupid ignorant People, ſuch as dare not ſay their Souls are their own, and over whom this *Moſes* you ſpeak of, aim'd to be temporal Lord, while his Brother *Aaron* domineer'd without Mercy over their Conſciences.

I DARE not tell you after what manner he treated Jeſus Chriſt and his Mother: But as to the Soul, that Spiritual Subſtance in us, of which they ſaid they had no Notion, I can't help obſerving to you an Objection that was ſtarted by the Prieſt, when we talk'd about the Reſurrection of the Dead. 'Tis certain, ſaid he, that the Earth is compos'd of innumerable ſmall Particles, whoſe Figures are extremely different, as appears from the variety of Things which this ſame Earth produces. Certain Parcels of Earth which are proper to form one ſort of Fruit, would not be at all proper for the Production of ſome others. What is good to make Copper, is worth nothing for Iron. From hence it comes, that if Wheat be ſow'd for ſeveral Years together in one and the ſame Field, it appears at laſt that all the Parts of Matter which were proper to yield us Wheat, being ſpent, and no more of it left, the Earth will abſolutely bear no more Wheat till 'tis dung'd. We'll apply this Example to Man: The Particles which are proper for the Compoſition of Human Fleſh, are not more infinite than thoſe of Corn;

Corn; and undoubtedly in this Kingdom there are no more than what will form a certain determinate Number of Perſons. Now make this Number as great as you pleaſe, I don't think 'tis equal to that of all the Men that have liv'd ſince the Beginning of the World. Nay, ſaid he, I know not if there be not reaſon to queſtion whether there are enough of theſe Parts here for the People that have been born in it for only ten Centuries. They who have ſtudied the Nature of Beings ever ſo little, know, that as the Hair and Nails grow, wear away, and fall off, the external Parts of the Fibres of our Body wear in like manner, while the Blood has its Pulſation, and augments the internal Parts. 'Tis incredible what a Diſſipation is occaſion'd every Day by that thing only which is call'd Perſpiration; but then there is this Advantage, that the Loſs of the Parts one way is ſupply'd another. So that if all that we loſe were to be tranſported into another Country, without any Return to ours, 'tis probable that a Famine and Mortality wou'd happen among us every now and then, to the end that the Parts of thoſe who dy'd might ſerve for the Increaſe of the others, till in ſhort there be no more left. From hence, ſaid he, I infer, that if we were to riſe again, it is impoſſible that of the Parts proper for the Conſtruction of Man, there would be enough left to diſtribute to all that have liv'd, ſo much as is abſolutely neceſſary for forming a Body of a middling Stature; and God knows whether there would be enough of the other Parts, becauſe if all that have dy'd for the ſeveral thouſands of Years paſt which the World has ſubſiſted,

ed, were laid together in a Heap, 'tis probable that the Bulk would even exceed that of the Earth, from whence they deriv'd their Origin.

WE will illuſtrate this Paradox by a general Calculation, as follows. We have in this Country 41600 Villages, and computing Twenty-two Families in each Village, at the rate of nine Perſons in every Family, one with another, every Village will contain near 200 Inhabitants; ſo that throughout the Kingdom we may ſuppoſe 8323000. Now we'll allow to every Humane Body, conſider'd under the Form of a Parallelopepid of five Foot high, and half a Foot broad and thick, one with another (you ſee I take it at the leaſt Computation) it will appear on the Day of Reſurrection that 8323000 Bodies will contain about 10400000 Cubic Feet of Fleſh. Suppoſe again, that this Number of Men be renew'd every fifty Years, then there muſt be 208 Millions of Cubic Feet of Fleſh, for the People that have liv'd in the Space of only 1000 Years, and 2080 Millions for the People within 10000 Years. Continue this Multiplication, and conſider what a vaſt Length it will run; but, ſaid he, with a great Exclamation, what would it not amount to, if the Opinion of ſome learned Men be true, which, as you told your Landlord, paſſes for certain, that the very Seed of moſt, if not of all Animals, is compounded of innumerable Animalcules which have Life and Motion, ſo that in a Body no bigger than a Grain of Millet, there are thouſands which, ſmall as they are, yet are Individuals of the ſame Species as the Animals by which they were engender'd, and muſt conſequently partake

of

of the ſame Advantages as the others, tho' they ſurpaſs them as much in Bigneſs, as the higheſt Mountain does a Grain of Sand; in which Caſe 'tis manifeſt that your Opinion is ridiculous, and a palpable Contradiction.

YOU talk of thouſands of Years, *ſaid I*, as if they were but ſo many Minutes, and according to you, the World muſt be much more ancient than it is. I make uſe of a definite Term, *ſaid he*, to denote an indefinite Number; there's no Neceſſity for being ſo very ſtrict. Be the World ancient or not, that does not alter the Nature of Things; 'tis certain that we believe it to have ſubſiſted, Time out of mind, which we cannot expreſs either by Words or Figures. You are not the only People, *I reply'd*, that have been deceiv'd in this Matter. The *Chineſe* have Chronologies for above 40000 Years, and the *Ægyptians* carry theirs at leaſt as far back. That ancient Philoſopher, *Plato*, introduces an *Ægyptian* Prieſt, who, in a Diſcourſe with *Solon*, tells him that 'twas 9000 Years ſince *Minerva* built *Sais*. *Diodorus* reckons 23000 Years from *Oſiris* and *Iſis*, to the time of *Alexander the Great*. *Laertius* ſpeaks of a Term of 49000 Years, during which they had calculated all the Eclipſes. They pretended, according to a Remark by St. *Auſtin*, to have obſerv'd the Stars for 100000 Years; and by the Report of *Cicero*, they had done it for 570000 Years. But all this is advanc'd without any Foundation, and from a Principle of Vanity to challenge a Superiority over the other Nations of the Earth. As for us, we adhere to *Moſes*'s Account,

count, who assures us that the World has not subsisted above 6000 Years. And really, if we give our selves the trouble to reflect upon this Matter ever so little, there is no room to question the Truth of his Assertion. One undeniable Proof that the World is not very ancient, is that we have no Histories which go above 4000 Years back. The Arts are also very modern. We don't find that above 500 Years ago they had any Knowledge of the Mariner's Compass, of the printing of Books, of Gunpowder, Fire-Arms, Perspectives, Microscopes, and other fine Inventions. 'Tis certain likewise that the Use of Money was unknown to the ancient Writers. Clocks, Watches, Glass, Paper, temper'd Steel, and abundance of other things, are of a very modern Date. I infer therefore, that in this, as well as in other Matters, 'tis absolutely necessary to be guided by the Word of God.

I TOLD you before, said the Priest, that none of us pretends to determine the Age of the World. We are persuaded that it had a Beginning, but we know not when; and all that I can say is, that it was a vast while ago. The first Man has not remark'd it, nor have we any thing like a Register of the Time; all that we know of it is by Tradition. Most of the Arts that you have now mention'd are unknown to us, and yet for all this, our Part of the World is as old as yours: We may be here a Million of Years without knowing them, because we have no need of them, and 'tis not impossible but others may do without them a long time, as well as we. Necessity, or the like Causes, have been the Mother of Inventions within.

in 100 Years, which were unthought of before in as many Ages. But all this is not concluſive. What I know is, that from Father to Son we always hand it down, that the Years which we have continu'd are not to be number'd: And it is certain, that notwithſtanding the vaſt Quantity of Wood which we burn, the Mountains of Coal which we have already levell'd are ſo conſiderable, that if we were to compute them, this alone would be ſufficient to confirm us in our Opinions. But the moſt remarkable thing of all is that about 7000 Years ago, as the Men were digging in one of thoſe Mountains, they found within 30 Foot of the Top, a double Hook of Iron of above 1500 Weight, which we ſtill keep, and which the Foreigners that have been here from time to time, affirm is one of thoſe Inſtruments that are us'd at Sea to ſtop great Ships; from whence one would think that the Ocean was in poſſeſſion of this fine Country before us, and that perhaps our higheſt Mountains only ſerv'd then to break its Billows.

BESIDES this, who knows but thoſe Arts, of which you pretend to the Invention, were not known to your Predeceſſors? I plainly obſerve here that the Sciences are upon the Decay. My Great Grandfather was much better skill'd than my Father in Aſtronomy: I know even leſs of it than both; and by what I learn from them, the Knowledge they had of it was very obſcure in compariſon of what their Anceſtors knew. 'Tis the very ſame in all other Families. There are Sciences which are cultivated at certain times, in complaiſance to the Mode that then prevails, but

but are intirely neglected at others; and 'tis poſſible they may be ſo far bury'd in Oblivion, that thoſe who are born afterwards, ſeeing no Trace of them, imagine when they come to the Exerciſe of 'em, that they are the firſt Inventors.

THAT may be, I reply'd, in your Country, where you have no Communication with other Parts of the World; but with us, if the Sciences decay in one Place by Wars and Conflagrations, or by the Indolence and Indifference of ſome People, of which we have ſeveral Inſtances, yet they are advanc'd elſewhere to a higher Degree of Perfection thro' the Diligence of others; and I queſtion whether any conſiderable Part of former Inventions is loſt; whereas on the contrary, every Day produces ſome Diſcovery or other that is curious and advantageous to Society,

I WOULD have explain'd to him that which he thought a Contradiction in *Geneſis*, with regard to the Luminaries, and to Light; and have ſhewn how far he was miſtaken concerning the Reſurrection; but he laugh'd at me, and all my Arguments: Indeed he was for admitting the Omnipotence of God, but then in this Caſe he did not think it neceſſary. For why, ſaid he, ſhould there be a Reſurrection after this Life? What Neceſſity for exterminating the Race of Man, to bring them to Life again hereafter? If Chriſt was God, could not he have exempted Man from that Death, as well as from the other? And beſides, if we were all to be living at one time, which way ſhould we ſubſiſt? There would not be Proviſion enough for a Breakfaſt thro' the whole Country. But, ſaid I, our Bodies will be of a-

nother

nother Nature; we ſhall neither eat, nor drink, nor be ſubject to any natural Infirmity; and moreover, God will tranſlate us into the Heaven of Heavens, where we ſhall be fill'd with his Glory.

WHAT! are you to be mounted above the Sky? Pray, Friend, what Notion have you then, continued he, of Heaven? As for our parts, we believe that the Air we breathe is infinitely more groſs than that which is above, and that the higher we are from the Earth, Matter is more ſubtil. This being ſo, the Heaven of the Bleſſed muſt be like a Vacuum, in compariſon with the lower Heavens, as to the Matter which fills it. Farewell then to the Lungs, becauſe there will be no more Breathing; farewell to the Uſe of the Larynx for Speech; farewell to the Inteſtines, and in a Word, to the whole Body, which the Blood, for want of being cool'd, will throw into a burning Fever that will ſoon conſume it. But ſuppoſe that all this be retain'd as a very uſeleſs Load, what is it to reſt upon? What is it will ſuſtain ſuch material heavy Bodies? They will be ſuſtain'd, ſaid I, by the Almighty Power of God. I am weary to hear you talk ſo much, reply'd he, of the Power of God. I plainly perceive that you practiſe the very ſame thing in your Religion, that we obſerve in our Myſteries of Nature; when we are at a Loſs to give a Reaſon for a Thing, we ſay that 'tis the Effect of ſome latent Power. I ſay it again, I make no manner of queſtion of God's Power; but I don't ſee the Neceſſity of inventing Chimeras in order to have recourſe to it. If yours indeed were a

Paradiſe

Paradiſe of Pleaſures, well and good; but a Place intirely devoid of every thing, where the Body ſhall abſolutely enjoy no Pleaſure, where there ſhall be no Object to affect the Senſes, no Odours to pleaſe the Senſe of Smelling, no Viands to ſtimulate the Palate, no Inſtrument of Muſic to tickle the Ear, nothing to divert the Eye; ſurely this is miraculous. Certainly you muſt be extremely ſenſual, becauſe notwithſtanding the Eternity you attribute to your Souls, which you believe to be capable of ſubſiſting independently from the Body, you chooſe rather to embarras the Soul again, and to clog it with a terrible Weight, which, by the way, according to you, is to have no Baſis to reſt on, rather than leave it at full Scope, and abandon this Lump of Fleſh to that Corruption from which it cannot poſſibly be exempt.

'TIS not the Soul alone, I reply'd, that does Good or Evil. The Body and the Mind both contribute to it, and they muſt equally partake of the Rewards or the Puniſhments which the Sovereign Judge of the World ſhall think them worthy of. All this, ſaid he, is not enough to convince me. Our Bodies are every Moment changing, and no Man ever liv'd to Twenty-five Years of Age, that retain'd any one thing that he brought into the World. The Blood, Fleſh, Skin, Nerves, and Bones, are continually diminiſhing on one hand, and increaſing on the other, and the whole Machine is every now and then renew'd. Our Inclinations vary alſo according to our Age and Conſtitution; for we are often great Deboſhees at Thirty Years of Age, and at Sixty extremely devout and retired. With which

which of these two Bodies, pray, are we to rise again? With the old decrepid and weak Body which has liv'd perfectly well, and whose Actions have been exemplary to the Youth and edifying to those advanc'd in Years? Or are we to rise again with that juvenile, straight, vigorous, handsome Body, which deserv'd twenty times to be doom'd to the Mines? You see plainly that take it which way you will, 'tis extremely perplexing, and that 'tis pretty evident that whoever was the Author of this Opinion, he did not foresee all those Inconveniencies. If I were for the Resurrection, t'would be a Matter of Indifference to me what Parts the Body was to be composed of when it rose again, for 'tis the same thing to the Soul; and I should lay it down for a certain Maxim, That it would be the Condition, and not the Place, that was to make us happy; but all these things are meer Trifles, unworthy of a Man of Sense.

BUT I must own to you, he added, that tho' I don't comprehend what you mean by a Soul, by a Spiritual Substance destitute of all Matter, or by a Spirit properly constituted by Thought, and yet confin'd in a Body, where its Powers are limited to prompt or make him to act according to its Will, and in a Body too which 'tis not oblig'd at all to for its Existence, yet as the Idea you form of it is agreeable, in that it gives you hopes of another Life, I am not surpris'd that there are People who acquiesce in your Opinion. They are undoubtedly of the common Class of Understandings, yet nevertheless they are happy; for Felicity, generally speaking,

ing, conſiſts meerly in the Imagination. They who are full of this Opinion, that Death is but a Paſſage to a Life of Glory, cannot be ſo loth to leave the World as others (eſpecially where they are ſo wedded to that Opinion, as I obſerve they are in your Parts) and muſt have ſome Taſte beforehand of that pretended Eternal Felicity. So that whether it be true, or not, the Thing is all one to them, neither more nor leſs than my Satisfaction would be, ſuppoſing I have 10000 *Kahn* in my Coffer, which I ſhall never want, and which I firmly believe to be of the beſt Metal that is dug out of our Mines, tho' they are all the while but Iron.

MY Comrade, who was a religious Man, was enrag'd to hear this Pagan call in queſtion the Myſteries of a Worſhip founded upon the pure Word of God; he gave me to underſtand ſeveral times, that he could hardly contain himſelf, and that he wanted at leaſt to reprove him by plain Paſſages out of holy Scripture. But I always diſſuaded him from it, becauſe the other deny'd that they were divine Writings, and as he alſo pretended they were but a Medley of very ill-concerted Fictions, it would have diſguſted him to have talk'd any more to him about it.

I TOLD them, however, with a real Deſign to alarm them, that I was not only perſuaded of an eternal State of Happineſs for thoſe who did good Works, and had Faith, but that there were alſo Torments and a Hell prepar'd for the Wicked and Unbelievers, and that every one would infallibly be dealt with according to the

the Good or Evil that he had done in this Life.

WHAT you have already ſaid, reply'd the Prieſt, tends to as much; but this is an Error as groſs as the former; for beſides that 'tis making God the moſt cruel of all Beings, to have created Man in order to damn him everlaſtingly, on pretence that he infring'd one of his Commands, and a Command too which was only that he ſhould not eat an Apple, the very Thought of which really makes me ſhrink with Horror; I deny that any body is capable of doing Good or Evil, with reſpect to God; and I ask you ſeriouſly, whether you your ſelf believe it? Undoubtedly, I do, ſaid I; and methinks it is ſo clear, that one cannot queſtion it without ſhocking common Senſe.

WHAT, ſaid I, are not Whoredom, Murder, Theft, and Blaſphemy, Crimes of Offence againſt the Majeſty of the Almighty? Not at all, reply'd the Prieſt; for in the firſt Place, if Whoredom was a Sin, God himſelf would be the Author of it, and, what is worſe, of Inceſt it ſelf, becauſe, according to you and your great *Moſes*, as there were at firſt but one Man and one Woman, their Deſcendants muſt have committed ſeveral Acts of Inceſt before there were Perſons enough living for them to avoid it: And as to the pretended Neceſſity of it at that time, I can't bear to hear it, for God could as eaſily have creted a hundred Perſons, as only one. We are all Children of the firſt Man. There are Degrees of Conſanguinity among us, but in the Sight of God 'tis not ſo. Women and Goods were in common

common at first, as Air and Water are now. But Men, who seem to have been form'd for Society, observing the Disorder which this occasion'd, thought it proper that every Father of a Family should have one or more Women, a certain Extent of Ground, and a particular Number of Cattle, at his sole Disposal. They were also oblig'd afterwards by common Consent, to make Laws imposing Penalties on those who did not observe them. So that if any body is offended by the Transgression of those Laws, 'tis properly the Society, or the Heads that represent it, and not at all the universal Spirit, who can by no means be offended by any Person. The same thing may be said of Robbery and Murder, whereby, properly speaking, no Hurt is done to any Being but to the Person whose Life or Property is taken away. And as to Blasphemy, tho' we punish it more severely than other Crimes, 'tis not because we think that God is offended at it; not at all; it would be a Weakness in him, if he were capable of it; but 'tis because we cannot tolerate Ingratitude, of which the blackest Instance that Man can be guilty of, is to affront or not to pay due Respect to him who is the Author of his Being, and of all the Benefits he is capable of receiving; besides, that it sets an ill Example to Children and Inferiors, with regard to their Parents and Masters.

As much as I dislik'd this Discourse, I was willing to hear him out; but upon his stopping I reply'd: You yourself acknowledge that Men seem to have been form'd for Society; and from hence I argue, that God, who form'd them for this Purpose, must will and intend, that they should avoid all

all those Actions which introduce Disorder and Confusion in Society, as you allow Whoredom, Murder, Theft, &c. to do. Does it not follow then, that God must be offended by these Actions which are so directly contrary to his Will and Intention? Give me a Reason why the Society, or Heads that represent it, should be offended by such Crimes, which will not hold as strongly for God's being so? Is it because their Will, express'd by their Laws, is offended and transgress'd? And is not the Will of God, express'd plainly in his forming us for Society, equally offended and transgress'd? When we speak of God's being offended or angry, we do not mean that he suffers what Men suffer on those Occasions: Anger is call'd a Passion, and it would be a Weakness in God (as you say) if that could be properly apply'd to him: but when we speak of him as angry or offended by our Actions, we consider his Disposition of Mind, on such Occasions, only with regard to the Effects of it towards us: we mean to signify not what he feels inwardly, but what we may expect to feel as the Punishment of our Crimes. Upon these and other Considerations, I, for my part, am firmly persuaded, that God may and must be offended by such Actions as you just now instanced in.

DO you believe, continued I, that God, who is a God of Order, and hates Confusion, has prescrib'd Rules to Man, and given him Laws, by which he is oblig'd to conduct himself and regulate his Actions? No, said he, in the Sense that you take it, I don't believe it, nor was it necessary, because he gave him Will and Understanding whereby to conduct himself, as you see we do. As there is no Pride, Vanity, Jealousy

or

or Desire, of Dominion in the Beasts, so God has not made them subject to any Civil Laws, nor would there have been any greater Need of such for rational Creatures, than there is for the Brutes, only as soon as some endeavour'd to impose upon the Weakness or Good-nature of others, there was a Necessity of inventing Punishments for those who transgress'd certain Rules, and these Rules were multiply'd as fast as the unbridled Licentiousness of some turbulent Spirits gave occasion for them.

YOU are very right there, said I, but pardon me if I presume to say that I deny that God had no Concern in them. 'Tis unreasonable to suppose that Providence would bring a rational Creature into the World, and afterwards leave him intirely to himself. He is the Father of him, and is also inclin'd to be his Director and Preserver. Good Sense tells us this, and his Word, for that is what I always recur to, assures us of it so positively, that there is no Possibility of doubting it; I wish to God, cry'd I, that you could but see that Word. It carries with it so many Marks of the Dictator that you would be the first to read it with Veneration if it fell into your Hands; and I don't despair of its being brought to you one Day or other by some unhappy Wretch, or else by an intire Nation, which shall come to settle with you by the Appointment of Heaven, in order to facilitate the Conversion of a People so honest and humane.

I SHOULD be glad, said he, to see the Book you speak so much of, but very sorry that it should be brought to us by a Host of People,

whom your own Laws, as ſacred as you think 'em, would not reſtrain from tyrannizing over us. We had much rather that things ſhould continue as they are. Be you but content with your Lot, as you ſee we are with ours, and you'll be more happy than you really are. But no more of this; methinks, ſaid he, 'tis time to have done. I retire. Adieu.

AFTER our Prieſt was gone, we convers'd a few Moments longer concerning the Immortality of the Soul, the Reſurrection of the Dead, and Life Eternal, becauſe the Judge took a Liking to the Diſcourſe; and by the Notice I took, if I am not deceiv'd, it would be eaſy to bring thoſe People into a good Opinion of our Religion.

BEFORE we parted, my Landlord ask'd me if I did not ſee the Burning Mountain when I was at the Mines. I did not ſo much as hear any mention of it, ſaid I. Probably, ſaid he, it did not burn at that time, for otherwiſe you would infallibly have obſerv'd it. I ſhould have been glad to have ſeen it, ſaid I to him, but this is no Rarity in our Country. There's *Hecla* in *Iceland*, *Ætna* in *Sicily*, *Veſuvius* in *Naples*, and ſeveral other ſuch Mountains elſewhere, which burn alſo at times; but there's no approaching very near them, even when they don't burn, becauſe of the Sulphureous Exhalations that ariſe out of them, the prodigious Quantity of Aſhes that encompaſſes them, and the Danger there is of ſinking into the Ground in ſeveral Places, where it is ſoft, trembling, or hollow.

PERHAPS, ſaid he, the *Europeans* who have been here before you, related the ſame thing to our

our Anceſtors, and that the People came by that means to be undeceiv'd in the miſtaken Notion they had entertain'd of the Cauſe of this Prodigy. For 'tis certain that the ſimple Vulgar were always of Opinion, that when God created the World, and determin'd to make certain Beings which ſhould have Life and Motion, he erected a Laboratory under the burning Mountain, with an Oven, and a monſtrous large Crucible in it, at the Mouth of which was a Bar that divided it into two equal Parts, and to this Bar there belong'd a Lamp. This great Workman, ſaid they, every now and then fill'd this Veſſel with Earth, which he took up behind him, in the Place of which there is now a great Lake, and when this Earth was become liquid by the Force of the Fire, he took out a ſmall Portion of it, by means of a hollow Tube that he made uſe of for the purpoſe, at one end of which he only blew, and there immediately appear'd at the other an Animal, which he ſent into the wide World. He had made but a ſmall Number of them, when he obſerv'd his Lamp ſet Fire to the Mountain under which it hung. This unexpected Inconvenience ſoon made him change his Poſt, for fear of burning the whole Earth. He had not ſought long, ere he found a deep Pit betwixt two Mountains, which he thought fit to fill with Water, to the end that the Fire might not ſpread, while he work'd underneath it. Mean time, as this Water ſoon attain'd to a very conſiderable Degree of Heat, which would have preſently chang'd it into a Vapour, he pierc'd a neighbouring Mountain, in order that a Stream

of fresh Water might issue from it to cool the Heat of the boiling Lake, which is undoubtedly the same that you tell me you saw, and which still retains the same Qualities.

THERE was an Addition to this Story, that under that very Place God form'd all other living Creatures in the same manner, except Man, who deriv'd his Origin elsewhere, as I may perhaps shew you another time, when I am more at leisure. Lastly, it was pretended that the Matter which was in the Crucible, being in a violent Agitation, the Sulphur, Mercury, and other mineral and metallic Parts, which evaporated in Smoke, were carry'd with Rapidity under the Arch of the neighbouring Mountains, into which they penetrated, and in some form'd Coal, and in others, Iron, or the Minerals and Metals that we find there.

THIS Fable, as gross as it is, and invented no doubt in honour to the Gentlemen Chymists, gave me occasion to think that Glass was not always unknown to them, and that formerly they had Blowers among them. Be this as it will, there the Conversation ended, because it grew late, and every one seem'd desirous to go to rest.

SOME Days after this Discourse, the Priest was resolv'd to make an Entertainment for our Landlord, and we too were of the Party. Then he made an Apology for having been so outrageous against our Opinions; and to make us Amends, desired *La Foret*, who had read both the *Old* and *New Testament* more than I had done, to give him the most circumstantial Account he could remember of the Contents of the Bible. My Comrade

rade did ſo, and he thank'd him, ſeeming to be very well ſatisfy'd with it, tho' I know full well that he only made a Jeſt of it; whereas I thought the Judge extremely edify'd with it: So that Affairs would have gone on very well, if we had always continued together; but to my great Sorrow, it was not the Will of Heaven it ſhould be ſo.

CHAP. VIII.

The Author is carry'd to the King's Court. He traces the Origin of thoſe Monarchs; deſcribes the Royal Palace, Temple, &c.

THE Governor, who, I ſaid a while ago, came to levy the Tribute, went afterwards and carry'd it to the King, to whom he related how he met with a couple of Foreigners at ſuch a Village, who knew how to make Machines that exactly meaſur'd Time, and divided a Day Natural into Twenty-four Parts, which they call'd Hours; and that the moſt wonderful thing of all, and of great Conveniency to the Inhabitants, was, that at every Hour, there was a Bowl of Metal on which a Hammer fell, denoting by a certain Number of Strokes the particular Time of the Day. The King ſeem'd ſurpris'd at this Account, and expreſs'd his Deſire to ſee us. Accordingly, we were very much alarm'd one Day, by the Arrival of two of this Prince's Domeſtics that came to demand us of our Landlord, who having no Ex-

cuſe to make for detaining us, gave us up with ſome Regret into their Hands.

THO' we were extremely ſorry to leave the Judge, who made us infinitely more welcome than I could have deſir'd to have been in *Europe*, yet we did not fail to expreſs great Joy for the Honour the King had done us to ſend for us. In the mean time we ask'd our Guides ſeveral times, what might be the Reaſon of it, but they proteſted to us they did not know. All that they could aſſure us of, was, that we were talk'd of at Court as Perſons of great Diſtinction, and that we ſhould not fail of being well entertain'd there. But I was afraid that the King having heard of the Diſputes we had held with the Prieſt, Judge, *&c.* had taken Exceptions againſt us, and intended to treat us as Seducers of his Subjects, and People that aim'd at the Subverſion of his Government; yet it prov'd quite otherwiſe.

WE were no ſooner arriv'd, but the King ſent for us to his Preſence. After having made our Reverences, we were going to bend the Knee before we ſpoke to him, purſuant to a Hint that had been given us for that Purpoſe; but he would not permit it, and order'd a Joint-Stool to be brought for each of us, on which he commanded us to ſit down; while all the others that were preſent were either ſtanding or kneeling. The King was ſeated in a magnificent Chair of State which was aſcended to by three Steps, and cover'd with a Canopy of admirable Sculpture. He ask'd us from whence we came, and how we got into his Country. We were oblig'd to gratify his Curioſity by an exact Detail of all our

Ad-

Adventures. He ſeem'd to be very glad that our Misfortunes had procur'd him the Pleaſure of ſeeing us. At length, he came to the Article of our Science, which he extoll'd mightily, and after having told us, that he had heard we had made a Clock in our Village, he gave us to underſtand, that the chief reaſon of his ſending for us, was to deſire us, to make one for him, and promis'd to reward our Performance with the tendereſt Marks of his Friendſhip, and by granting whatever we ſhould deſire at his Hands. We anſwer'd with a profound Obeiſance, that we were not accuſtom'd to be ſo treated by our Sovereigns, that his Majeſty did us a great deal of Honour to think us worthy of being employ'd in his Service, and that we would diſcharge ourſelves in the beſt manner we could.

UPON this we were conducted into a very fine Apartment, which was to be our own, where Care was taken to ſerve and accommodate us as if we had been Perſons of great Quality. Next Day, we gave Orders for fetching our Tools from the Place where we left them, caus'd ſeveral others to be made, ſuch as my Comrade directed, and ſet about the Work with all poſſible Speed, becauſe the King was impatient to ſee us at it.

THE Monarch who then reign'd, was call'd *Buſtrol.* He was a ſober, modeſt, affable Prince, and, if he is ſtill living, as I hope he is, one who is much more admir'd for his ſhining Virtues than for Pomp and Grandeur. He had a large full Robe on of the fineſt Goats-Hair, dy'd red, that was in all the Country, and he had a Fringe round it above a Foot deep. He wore a

five-corner'd Cap with a Copper Button on it, an Inch and half in Diameter, which is the principal Mark of his Royalty, if you except his Gravity, Stature, and good Air.

THE Governors are alſo cloth'd in red Robes, but they are of Woollen, and every way leſs. Other Men without Exception, wear Woollen Robes of mix'd Colours. The Judges only are diſtinguiſh'd by their Caps. As to the Women, they all have Habits or Veils of fine Linen for their upper Garments, under which they wear others more or leſs according to the Seaſon.

THE Children of the King have no Prerogatives above others, and tho' a greater Deference is paid them, 'tis purely voluntary. The eldeſt only is honour'd, and dreſs'd almoſt like his Father, only he does not wear the Button.

THE King may have 12 Wives, whom he either cauſes to be choſe, or elſe chooſes himſelf from among the People when he takes a Tour Abroad to ſhew himſelf, and they durſt not refuſe him any Woman tho' ſhe is actually promis'd to another. The Governors may have three, the Judges two, and the People one. The Prieſts are likewiſe permitted to have two Wives at a time; but whether they have both at one time or not, they are allow'd but two in all as long as they live, for if they happen to ſurvive them, they are prohibited to marry again.

THE moſt magnificent Thing belonging to the King is his Palace ſituated in the middle of the Royal Canton, which is of the ſame Extent as the others. It fronts to the N. N. E. is 36 Geometrical Paces in Breadth, and 20 in Depth. The

firſt

firſt Floor, which is ten Foot above the Foundation, is divided into ſeveral Apartments well roof'd, where there's no want of Pilaſters, nor of Marble of various Sorts and Colours. The Pavement is red, the Pillars black, and the Roof-work white. The ſecond Story being 20 Foot from the firſt, has on the Outſide oppoſite to the Portal, a Stair-Caſe in form of an half Oval, with 20 Steps, each half a Foot in height. The firſt Room we enter, is a ſpacious Antichamber, behind which is the Chamber of Audience: From the Antichamber there run two narrow Paſſages, one on the Right, the other on the Left, which divide the main Body of the Building into two Parts, ſo that there are four ſtately Salons on each Side, and in the whole ten Apartments with the fineſt Cielings in the World, and Wainſcotting than which I never ſaw any more curiouſly carv'd. Over this ſecond Story there is a third divided almoſt in the ſame Manner as the former, only that inſtead of a Chamber of Audience, there is the Bed-Chamber where his Majeſty lies. Then we come to a Platform cover'd with Pewter, and a Balluſtrade all round of maſſy Copper. In the middle of it there is a round Pavilion cover'd with Copper alſo, and the whole is ſo well poliſh'd, that when the Sun ſhines on it, it dazzles ones Eyes. At the Top there is a Globe of 20 Foot Circumference, and a ſquare Pyramid upon it which is one Foot in the Baſe and five in height, ſupported by twelve Pillars of Agate. In the whole Building there is nothing to be ſeen ſcarce but Marble, Agate, Jaſper, and ſuch exquiſite fine Stones wonderfully well poliſh'd and

wrought; the whole built according to an Order which comes pretty near to the *Corinthian*, except the Columns of the Cellars which are properly in the *Tuscan* Taste.

THERE being no Glass in this Country, they use instead of it the Skins of the Pole, which they rasp and dress in such a manner, that they last for ever, and give so free a Passage to the Light, that you have as much of it within Doors as without. This Parchment they put up in their Windows in the form of Quarrels, but as good and fine as it is, it must be own'd that our Glass surpasses it by far.

BEHIND the Palace there is a Dome of the Roman Order, 150 Foot Diameter, cover'd also with Copper, and of the same Materials and Magnificence as the Palace. This Place serves for two Uses, the Temple and the Senate. The King's Throne is on the South Side over-against the Gate, and is rais'd six Foot upon a Stage of four which is cover'd with a magnificent Carpet; for 'tis certain these People infinitely surpass the *Turks* in the Weaving of their Tapistry. In the middle of the Cieling, there's a very large Copper Sun, the Body of which is not perhaps above 10 or 12 Foot Diameter, but its Rays extend to a vast Distance. The Cone upon the Top of the Dome is broad and high. The whole is of Copper, and supported by six great Pillars or Towers, in each of which there is a Stair-case that leads to the Galleries of this stately Edifice.

ALL round the Canton there are Rows of Lodgings built with Pavilions upon the Angles, and two upon each Front or Side, equidistant from

from one another, ſo that in all there are twelve. Twelve Arches are alſo built between thoſe Pavilions, which are like ſo many Gates open to go out of the Canton by 12 Bridges with Balluſtrades of wrought Copper over-againſt them. Within theſe Lodgings in ſhort, which are for the King's twelve Wives, and for ſome of the Domeſticks of the Court, there runs a Gallery all round ſupported by Pillars of Jaſper cover'd with Pewter like the reſt of the Lodgings, except the Pavilions which are of Copper, and extraordinary beautiful. The void Spaces between all theſe Buildings are full of Obelisks, Pyramids, Statues upon magnificent Pedeſtals, Pots full of all manner of Flowers according to the Seaſon, Cages full of Birds of all the Colours in the Rainbow, which make very agreeable Melody, and in a Word, here is every thing to pleaſe the Senſes, ſo that this Place is properly an inchanted Paradiſe.

THE Canton which lies to the South of the Palace, is a Park full of Goats, Stags, which are very ſmall in this Country, Bucks, Does, *&c.* and eſpecially a Sort of Animals call'd Pol-, which have long Hair, a Horn on their Heads, two Ears flat and broad as ones Hand, a ſhort Tail but very broad, and great flat Feet, which is the Reaſon that they commonly ſtand upright. This Animal is about the bigneſs of our little Aſſes; the Fleſh of it is very delicate, but there's ſcarce any to be ſeen except in the King's Parks, tho' the Damage is not very great, by reaſon there are few People who do not ſcruple to eat it, becauſe it very much reſembles a Man, and ſeems indeed to be endow'd with ſome Reaſon.

THE

THE Canton to the South which is our North, is one continued Flower-Garden water'd with 1000 little artificial Fountains. The two others on the Right and Left are deſign'd for Fruit-trees, Pulſe, and Pot-herbs; and beſides thoſe fine Cantons there are twenty more, twelve of which are for the Queen's, and for their Children and Domeſtics, and the eight others for Tillage, Paſturage, *&c.*

THE King's Revenues conſiſt in the annual Payment of a piece of Copper by every Maſter of a Family, which is about the Size of a Guinea. I mention'd it once before by the Name of *Kala*, and it has Inſcriptions engrav'd on it, ſignifying *Our Hearts to God* on one Side, and *Our Eſtates to the King* on the other. I cannot tell what theſe Pieces are worth, but I have obſerv'd that they make as much of 'em in that Country as we do of *Lewis d'Or*'s in *France*. The current Coin here is of Pewter, of which there are Pieces of all Sizes with each a different Stamp. With this Coin they pay all the Officers of the State; tho' the Gain to particular Perſons is but a Trifle, yet as there are 41600 Villages or 41575 deducting the 25 Villages of the Royal Family, yet this Article amounts to 831500 Kalı, not reckoning the Judges and Prieſts who are exempt from paying the Tribute which, ſetting aſide the Honour of their Poſts, is all they get by them.

BUT I was then inform'd, that Things had not been fix'd on that Foot above 345 Years. Before then, the Kingly Power had been Time immemorial, or to ſpeak in their Language, eternally in one and the ſame Family. Theſe Kings were call'd

call'd Sons of the Sun and Earth, which Deſcent made them very ambitious, and the Children grew worſe and worſe from Generation to Generation. They degenerated ſo far as to demand Homage and Adoration from their Subjects. They abus'd their Wives and Daughters, prey'd upon their Eſtates, and talk'd of nothing leſs than cutting their Throats, when they gave the leaſt Indications that they were not pleas'd with their Tyranny.

AT laſt, as good Luck would have it for thoſe wretched People, it happen'd I know not how, that a *Portugueſe* arriv'd there, who having learnt their Language, told them, that after having been drove aſhore upon their Coaſt, as we had been, he ſettled there with his Comrades, who were all dead within four Years Time, except one only, with whom he choſe by the help of a very little Boat, to go up the River which ran thereabouts into the Sea. To this he added, that they were 8 Months in the Voyage, and that after having ſurmounted inconceivable Difficulties, they arriv'd at a Gulph of the Mountain from whence this River flow'd. They try'd to enter it ſeveral times, but it was ſo dark, and there were ſo many Rocks, Blind Holes, and Obſtacles of all kinds, that they deſpair'd of paſſing it. At length however, they accompliſh'd their Deſign, for after having gone above two Leagues under Ground, they arriv'd in the Country ſo jaded and fatigued, that they had not Strength to ſtir; and when this *Portugueſe* had ſet his Foot upon Land, the other trying to do the ſame, fell backwards into the Boat, which at the ſame time drove from Shore, inſomuch that this Man who was landed,

landed, not being able to reach to him, he had the Mortification to ſee him return into the Gulph from whence he never came out again. The Prieſt, to whom he told this Story, was as much aſtoniſh'd at it, as he was at his coming. He made him repeat it ſeveral times, thinking to catch him tripping, 'till having no more room to doubt of the Truth of a Relation ſo well circumſtantiated, he went and imparted it to the Judge, who communicated it to the principal Men of the other neighbouring Cantons, ſo that in a very little time the whole Kingdom knew that their Kings had been Knaves and Villains, in that under pretence of a very particular and miraculous Birth, which ſet them infinitely above their Subjects, they treated them as Slaves, and were in a fair way in time to have us'd 'em like Dogs. But before ſix Weeks were gone and paſt, they ſhook off the Yoke, the King was depos'd, and ſent to the Mines for his Life: And in his Place they choſe the eldeſt Governour of the Country, with a Promiſe to let his Children reign after him, ſo long as they were humane, virtuous, and equitable.

THO' this baniſh'd Prince was a wicked Man, yet in one reſpect he was to be pity'd, becauſe he proteſted to his Dying-Day that he believ'd what was publiſh'd concerning the Origin of his Anceſtors, of whom he knew nothing but by Tradition. This Tradition however made the whole Race very inſolent, and to value themſelves infinitely above other Mortals; and indeed it was enough to puff them up, and to impreſs the People's Minds with a very profound Reſpect for their

Per-

Perſons, while both were perſuaded of the Truth of the Fact, which was related to me in the following Manner by Perſons that might be depended on.

GOD, ſaid they, was from all Eternity, but Heaven and Earth are not ſo ancient. As ſoon as the World was created, the Earth which is an animated Body, being charm'd with the ſhining Beauty of the Sun, became deſperately in Love with him, made divers Attempts to mount up to him, but its Efforts were in vain, becauſe the Weight of its Maſs was ſuch a Clog to it, that it roſe but a very little way. The Sun perceiving how it ſhook and trembled, took Pity of it, and hiding himſelf in Clouds extremely thick, for fear of inflaming it more, and ſcorching it quite up, drew near to it, pierc'd it with his Rays to its very Bowels, and immediately retir'd. The Earth that Moment conceiv'd, and in 365 Days $\frac{1}{4}$ after, was deliver'd of a Man and a Woman both ſurprizingly beautiful and majeſtick. This charming Couple advancing into the Country where they met with all manner of Trees without number bearing the choiceſt Fruits, had the Curioſity to ramble all over the Earth where 'twas acceſſible, till at length being arriv'd at the Southern Extremities of this vaſt Country, they found it bounded by unpaſſable Mountains. There it was, that *Alo!* and his Wife *Mola*, by which Names, 'tis ſaid, they were call'd, had ſome Contention. She it ſeems was for turning to the Right Hand, or elſe for going back the ſame Way they came, and he was for puſhing on further, but being oblig'd to alter his Purpoſe by the Obſtinacy of his Wife, he

was

was in ſuch a Paſſion, that he ſtruck the Rock ſo hard with his Foot that it made a Gap, out of which Water flow'd in abundance, and form'd a River, which ran like a Torrent into a Pit, from whence there came out two Twins. This ſo cool'd the Matrix of the Earth, that it never more deſir'd to be in Conjunction with its Lover the Sun, and conſequently never had any more Children.

TO this fine Tale they added, that from theſe two Perſons were deſcended the Inhabitants of their Country, which they thought was the only Part of the World that was inhabited. But as ſoon as the *Portugueſe* arriv'd, and told his Adventures, they were convinc'd, that they were not the only People of the World, and that the pretended Labour of the Earth was a meer Fable; which was follow'd by the Revolution that I juſt now mention'd. From that Time, the Kings and their Subjects liv'd in great Tranquillity and Harmony, ſpoke extremely well of one another, and indeed, I always obſerv'd that the People had an infinite Reſpect for their Sovereign, and that the King on his Part was fond of giving Demonſtrations of his Tenderneſs to all that approach'd his Preſence. He was civil to all Men in general, and as to us in particular, 'tis certain that he was ſo beyond meaſure.

CHAP. IX.

Which contains ſeveral very curious Converſations betwixt the King and our Author.

'TIS not to be imagin'd how aſſiduous this Monarch was at firſt to ſee us at work, and how attentive to hear us talk of our Part of the World. Above all, he took an unſpeakable Pleaſure in converſing about the Sciences, and particularly Philoſophy, in which he exercis'd himſelf very much: And we were ſeldom together, but he put ſome Queſtion to me in Natural Philoſophy, and Mechanics, or Aſtronomy.

HE was mightily fond of the Syſtem of *Copernicus*, and to his Praiſe be it ſpoken, I made him eaſily comprehend all the different Motions which the Earth was under a Neceſſity of making to anſwer the apparent Motions according to the Opinion of the Vulgar, which are diſtinguiſh'd by Diurnal from Weſt to Eaſt, by annual round the Sun, the Motion of the fix'd Stars, and the two Motions of Vibration aſcrib'd heretofore to the Cryſtalline Heavens. For I took a Bowl, and having mark'd on it the chief Points and Circles of a Terreſtrial Globe, I ſhew'd him how the Earth turn'd from Weſt to Eaſt round its Centre in a Natural Day, and in the Space of 365 Days 6 Hours wanting 11 Minutes, round the Sun, which I plac'd in the Centre of the World. I afterwards obſerv'd to him how this annual Motion was not perform'd upon the Equator but according to the Ecliptic, becauſe the Axis of the Earth,

Earth, inſtead of being perpendicular to the Plan of the annual Circle, inclines to it on both Sides 23 Degrees 30 Minutes which we call the Motion of Paralleliſm. Then we diſcours'd of the fourth Motion occaſion'd by the Impulſion or Preſſure which the Earth feels more or leſs according to the Places where it paſſes in its Tour; for by that means it happens that its Axis riſes or falls ſometimes ſeveral Minutes, and that conſequently the Ecliptic appears nearer the Equator at certain Times than at others. This is alſo explain'd perfectly well by the ſubtile Matter which enters and paſſes by the Vortexes; but I did not chooſe then to expatiate upon a Point which perhaps would have puzzled him, or at leaſt requir'd more Time. As to the Calculation of Eclipſes, this Prince underſtood it as well as *Copernicus* himſelf; he reaſon'd very well about Comets, Planets, Meteors, and all the moſt agreeable Parts of Natural Philoſophy. But he was abſolutely ignorant of the Cauſe of the Ebbing and Flowing of the Sea, which he had indeed ſcarce ever heard of; and he was all in Admiration to hear of the Proportion of Spaces which Falling Bodies paſs through in certain determin'd Times, of the Vibration of Pendulums, of the Force of the Lever, and in general of every thing relating to Statics.

FIRE-ARMS were alſo quite unknown to him, but the bad Uſe that they were put to, took off his liking to them. Nothing affected him with ſo much Horror as the Narratives I gave him now and then, of our Wars and bloody Battles. He could not conceive how People could be ſo

filly as to ruſh into Slaughter, and to the Deſtruction of their Species, for ſuch trifling Cauſes, and often only for gratifying the Covetouſneſs, Ambition, or Caprice of one Man. 'Tis near four Centuries ago, he ſaid to me one Day, that the King then reigning was declar'd incapable, becauſe under pretence of his Origin and ſuch a miraculous Birth, as diſtinguiſh'd him from other Men, he treated his Subjects at his Will and Pleaſure. You would have ſaid, added he, that his Vanity was ſufficient to excite him to great Undertakings in order to maintain himſelf on the Throne; but ſo far from it, that he ſcarce ſaid a Word in his own Vindication, and to appeaſe the Wrath of thoſe who ſent him to the Mines; and when he heard it was his People's Will, he inſtantly obey'd. And I ſwear to you, that inſtead of expoſing Armies to the Fury of my Enemies, I would rather by a thouſand times be the meaneſt Man in my Kingdom, than keep the Sovereignty at the Expence of one ſingle Man's Life.

I own, ſaid I, that there is ſomething cruel and inhuman in War; but juſt Wars are often enter'd into, and then God himſelf gives a Sanction to them, and as a Mark that he takes Pleaſure in them, he has term'd himſelf the *God of Hoſts*. O Heavens! ſaid the King, What's that you ſay? I am angry to hear you talk ſo. 'Tis very well for you that none of our Judges hears you, for tho' you are but a Stranger, you would paſs your Time very ill; becauſe, according to our Principles, you could not have utter'd a more enormous Blaſphemy. I ask your Pardon, Sir, ſaid I; the moſt holy Men that have written our Law, affect in many

ny Places thus to characteriſe the Deity: To him alone they aſcribe all the Victories and Conqueſts obtain'd by the *Jews*, and they put him at the Head of their Troops like a formidable General, who demoliſhes every thing in his way. I am far from thinking it a Crime to tread in the Steps of ſuch great Men, and to have their Lives, Precepts, and Sentiments in Veneration; yet I have ſo much Reſpect for your Perſon, that I had rather be for ever ſilent, than give you any Cauſe of Diſguſt. What, ſaid the King, do your Legiſlators talk in this Strain? Really, I think it very extraordinary that a God, who, according to you, forbids the ſhedding of one Man's Blood, ſhould authoriſe a general Slaughter of whole Nations. There is undoubtedly a great deal of Paſſion and Cruelty in your Laws; the very Thought of it makes me ſhiver. Let us talk no more of it, for fear I ſhould ſay more than you would chooſe to hear. I am really charm'd with your Sciences, but your Religion and your Politicks don't pleaſe me at all. That's becauſe you don't underſtand 'em, Sir, ſaid I; I want Books, and am not a Divine good enough to convert you; but we have a thouſand Doctors in our Country capable of pointing out ſo many Marks of the Divinity in our Bible, and to ſhew you the Contents of it ſo clearly that you wou'd be forc'd to give your Conſent to it as much as to any Demonſtration in the Mathematics.

VERY well, reply'd the King; but till ſuch time as we ſee one, tell me, how thoſe Armies which you talk to me ſo much of, are compos'd and ſubſiſted, how they fight, what Reward the Conquerors

querors have, and what Profit the Widows and Orphans; whether ſuch Wars have no End, and whether you never have a Peace. Very ſeldom, Sir, ſaid I: The Earth is immenſely great, in compariſon to your Empire; there's a vaſt Number of ſuch Kingdoms in the Parts from whence we came. So many great Lords cannot poſſibly live long without a Miſunderſtanding: The Intereſts of the Royal Families, more than thoſe of private Men, often cauſe Broils. Jealouſy, the Deſire of Aggrandiſement, Precedence, the Diverſity of Religions almoſt in every Kingdom; all theſe things are Cauſes of Ruptures, which are ſeldom accommodated till there has been a great Effuſion of Blood. We have an Empire call'd *Spain*, in the Bowels of which a War broke out ſome time ago, which rag'd fifty or ſixty Years, and coſt the Lives of a Million of Men.

THE prevailing Religion of that Country, and in which I was born, is the Chriſtian, which differs extremely from all others; nor have all that profeſs it the ſame Sentiments in every reſpect. The greateſt part pretend, 'tis not ſufficient to worſhip one God, the Creator of Heaven and Earth, but that Prayers ſhould alſo be made to the departed Saints, to the end that they may intercede for us in Paradiſe. The Prelates of this Church injoin the Neceſſity of believing Purgatory, which is a Place full of Fire and Brimſtone, where, after Death, Souls are to fry in Torment, for a certain Number of Years, more or leſs, according to the Crimes they have committed, that they may be enabled to appear pure and undefiled before the Throne of God. This ſame Church demands

mands a Confeſſion that Jeſus Chriſt is alive ſtill in Fleſh and Bones, and altogether as large, as when he was crucify'd, in a Wafer or Piece of Paſte no bigger than the Palm of one's Hand, which the Prieſt gives to every Layman on certain Days of the Year appropriated to that Ceremony, *&c.* Many People finding theſe Maxims as inconſiſtent with common Senſe, as they are with the Precepts contain'd in the ſacred Book of our Laws, thought in their Conſciences they ſhould be to blame if they obſerv'd them. The Clergy perceiving this Diſorder in the Church, erected a ſevere Tribunal, which impos'd great Penalties on thoſe that took the Liberty to reform the Divine Worſhip. To this we muſt add, that beſides the Clergy who drain'd the People's Purſes, and took their Money for reading Prayers, by which they pretended effectually to deliver the Souls of their Anceſtors out of Purgatory, the King's Officers loaded them every Day with new Taxes, inſomuch that the moſt reſolute Inhabitants, in order to ſhake off the Yoke, form'd ſecret Cabals, and made themſelves Maſters of ſome wall'd Cantons or Cities. Thereupon Commerce decay'd, the Labourers ſuffer'd for want of Work, and a Foreign Prince puts himſelf at the Head of the Malecontents, who are join'd by other Monarchs jealous of the King of *Spain*'s Greatneſs, who only ſeek to raiſe themſelves upon his Ruin. Companies of Tradeſmen are form'd, who are glad to ſerve for their Subſiſtence. Of theſe Companies, which conſiſt of 100 Men, more or leſs, with their proper Officers, are form'd Regiments, and of theſe Regiments Armies, which are commanded

ded by Generals experienc'd in the Art of War, who take care to furniſh them with Arms, Clothes, and all ſorts of Ammunition, at the Expence of the Public, whom the Magiſtrates charge with Subſidies for that Purpoſe. When the Forces are ready in the Field, a thouſand Artifices and Stratagems are invented and made uſe of to ſurpriſe the Enemy; at length they come to cloſe Engagement, and after they have fought a whole Day many times, it happens ſometimes that the greateſt Advantage which the Conqueror has to boaſt of is, having kept the Field of Battle, which coſts him upon thoſe Occaſions 15 or 20000 fighting Men, while perhaps his Enemy retreats about 500 Paces, with the Loſs of not half that Number. When the one has intirely defeated the other, he improves his Victory by gaining Countries and Towns, where ſometimes he lays all waſte with Fire and Sword. Mean time his Adverſary endeavours to recruit himſelf, either by raiſing new Troops, or by contracting Alliances with other Princes whom he draws into his Party. Then he returns to the Charge, when Fortune declares ſometimes for the one, ſometimes for the other, till their Men and Money are exhauſted, and they are forc'd to come to an Accommodation; which is ſure to laſt not long, becauſe there are turbulent Spirits that never want Pretences to diſturb the Tranquillity.

BUT what becomes of thoſe Troops? ſaid the King. They are disbanded, I reply'd. That's well, continu'd he, for the Eaſe of the People; but are Men who are accuſtom'd in War-time to a licentious way of living, and undoubtedly to all

ſorts

ſorts of Pleaſures, are ſuch fit for any other Imployment? and how do they ſubſiſt when their Pay is at an end? I have already told your Majeſty, ſaid I, that there's an infinite Number of Countries in the World, govern'd by different Princes, ſo that when Troubles are over in one Place, they generally begin again in another, to which the Soldiers repair for Employment; or elſe they return home to their Callings. I confeſs, however, that there's a great Number, who having loſt the Spirit of Induſtry, or not knowing any Trade to follow, beg from Door to Door with their Wives and Children (and if they dy'd in the Wars, their Widows and Orphans do the ſame) or elſe abandon themſelves to ill Courſes for a better Livelihood. Some rob upon the Highway, others coin Money, and ſome keep company with lewd Women, whom they help to ruine, and ſometimes to murder ſuch as haunt the Stews. In ſhort, there are no Intrigues but what they commit to ſupport their idle Courſes, which obliges honeſt People to take very great care that they ben't gull'd by them, as they but too often are. I could confirm this Truth by a hundred ſhocking Inſtances, but one ſhall ſuffice at preſent, to give you an Idea of the reſt.

ABOUT eight Months before I left *Paris*, that famous City, which is the Metropolis of the fineſt Kingdom in *Europe*, a Counſellor of the Parliament travelling in his Coach, in a By-Street, where there was but little Trade, ſpy'd a very pretty young Woman at a diſtance, who by extending her Arms, joining her Hands, and lifting up her Eyes ſometimes to Heaven, and then caſting them down to the

the Earth, gave Proofs that she was in some very great Agonies of Grief. The Noise of the Coach-Wheels and the Horses, made her stop all of a sudden, so that she immediately wiped her Face, and with a slow Pace walk'd on. The Counsellor, who soon overtook her, halted, and ask'd her very civilly, what was the Matter. I see, said he, you have been weeping plentifully, has any Disaster happen'd to your Family? Speak freely, you are happily fallen into good Hands; there are many People who would take an Advantage of the Confusion you are in, but from me you have nothing to fear. I am a frank honest Man, of some Reputation, and if I can be of Service to you in any thing, I will exert my self with all the Zeal I'm capable of. Tho' the Girl was no more than sixteen or seventeen Years old, she put on a serious Air at first, and held it out stifly for a long time, that she ail'd nothing, that she did not want his Protection, tho' however she was oblig'd to him for the Offer, and that all she desired of him was, that he would let her proceed. But at length, after many Intreaties, which were the real Effect of the Gentleman's compassionate Temper, the young Woman falling again into Tears, which she could refrain no longer, said to him, You are in the right, Sir, I am not my self, I am disorder'd in my Mind, I run up and down like one mad, and am within an Ace sometimes of making away with my self. I am the only Daughter of a Father who perfectly ador'd me. My Will was a Law to him, which he took a Pleasure in observing, whatever it was; so that I never ask'd him any thing but he imme-

diately granted it. But about a Twelvemonth ago, when he was in the Prime of his Years, God call'd him to himſelf, at which time the Thoughts of our Separation gave him a thouſand times more Uneaſineſs than the Proſpect of Death. He was ſo loth to leave me, that he recommended me, in the moſt earneſt manner, to the Care of his Wife, my Mother-in-law, who promis'd him whatever he deſir'd, embrac'd me in his Preſence, and ſwore by an Oath, accompany'd with a Torrent of Tears, that I ſhould for ever have a Share in her tendereſt Friendſhip. But alas! my poor Father had ſcarce clos'd his Eyes, when ſhe began to tyrannize over me in ſuch a manner, that there is ſcarce a Moment but ſhe inſults and threatens me; from Menaces ſhe often proceeds to Blows; and this very Day, after having us'd me extremely ill, ſhe turn'd me out of Doors. That's bad indeed, ſaid the Counſellor; you have reaſon, without diſpute, to complain; come into my Coach, if you pleaſe; I muſt make you Friends, if poſſible, or at leaſt know what's the Cauſe of ſuch a dangerous Quarrel. She expreſs'd a Reluctance againſt taking him home with her; ſhe was very fearful of being ſeen, and her Mother-in-law's Indignation made her tremble; but ſhe was fain to comply at laſt. The Widow's Houſe made a goodly Appearance, and was ſeparated from the Street by a ſtrong Wall, and a large Yard before the Door. The Counſellor having ſent in to know whether the Gentlewoman was at leiſure, was carry'd into a fine Hall, hung with Tapeſtry, to which Madam came in a Moment. He was ſurpris'd to find her a tall handſome Woman, about

fifty

fifty Years of Age, with a ſweet engaging Countenance, and the Porte of a Queen, rather than the Widow of a private Man. After mutual Compliments, he gave her an exact Account of what had paſs'd betwixt him and her Daughter, ſhew'd her what would be the Conſequence, and having begg'd her Pardon for the Liberty he took to intermeddle in an Affair which was properly Domeſtic, he intreated her very courteouſly to tell him the Reaſon of the Difference. The old Lady thank'd him for the kind Concern he ſhew'd for her Family, and did not ſpare to reproach her Daughter-in-law; but at length, in Complaiſance to the Arbitrator, Miſs was ſent for in, reſtor'd to Madam's good Graces, and they made reciprocal Promiſes, the one to be very obedient for the future, the other to be more indulgent, and to ſhew all the tender Regard that a Mother is capable of to a Child of her own, which was very much to the Satisfaction of the Counſellor, who was glad at his Heart that he had been ſo ſucceſsful a Mediator. Then the Daughter was order'd to withdraw, and Madam took that Opportunity to confeſs her vaſt Obligation to the Counſellor. She earneſtly intreated him to bring her into the Acquaintance of his Lady, that ſhe might have more Opportunities of being benefited by his wholeſome Counſels: She hop'd he would vouchſafe to honour her with his Company at Dinner, the rather becauſe the Cloth was already laid, and as ſhe had invited ſome Friends, ſhe was the better prepar'd to regale him with three or four good Diſhes. This Compliment was utter'd with ſo good a Grace, that the Counſellor gave his Con-

ſent, order'd his Coachman to go home and tell his Family not to wait for him, and bid him return again with the Coach in two Hours. Mean time the Lady, with his Leave, retir'd to give Orders concerning the Dinner. As he was walking alone, expecting her Return, he accidentally ſtruck his Elbow againſt the Hangings, and found a void Space, which excited his Curioſity to lift them up, when, to his great Aſtoniſhment, he ſaw the naked Corps of a Man all bloody, who ſeem'd to have been but lately murder'd, extended at full length upon a Bed of Straw contriv'd in the Wall. This horrid Spectacle, which threaten'd him with the like Fate, made him run precipitantly out of the Room, and when he was got into the middle of the Yard, ſome body ſaw him and call'd to him, intreating him to have a little Patience, adding, that the old Lady would be with him in a Trice, that every thing was ready to be ſerv'd up, *&c.* But all theſe fine Words could not ſtop him. He told them, as he ran out, that ſomething was juſt come into his Head which would admit of no Delay, that he would be back again almoſt as ſoon as gone, and that fall to as ſoon as they pleas'd, there would be enough left for him. Juſt as he was got out of the Gate, who ſhou'd enter but four great cut-throat Villains, who were hir'd no doubt to reward him for his good Offices; but they came a little too late, ſo that the honeſt Man eſcap'd the Snare that was laid for him, and the old Bawd and the young Whore had the Mortification to find that they had acted their Parts in vain.

VERILY,

VERILY, said the King, that was a Stratagem deep enough to have caught the wisest Man in the World; but what was the Consequence of it? Was no Search made after the Criminals, that they might be punish'd for an Example to such Ruffians? None at all, said I. People who are too busy upon such Occasions, generally come off very scurvily. The Gangs of those Villains are so numerous, that the least Disturbance you give any one of 'em, is sure to be doubly reveng'd sooner or later, by the rest of them, either by Day or by Night, upon you and yours, in one manner or another. And is this all that you get, said the King, by the Wars to which you are expos'd? I pity your Fate; for at this rate you are only a Prey to the Wicked, and wretched Victims to the Ambition and Self-Interest of your Sovereigns. The very Dogs have a better time on't in my Country, than Men have in yours. You reason upon your own Principles, said I, and we act according to ours: Every one thinks his own Opinion the best, and is offended with those that differ from him. 'Tis true, he reply'd, that Education has a great Ascendant over our Minds. Our Ancestors would have been content to be sacrificed rather than admit of the least Doubt of the Excellence of their Origin. The Sun had engender'd them, as they believ'd, and the Earth had brought them forth; but now, a Man would be sent to the Mines that should go about to maintain that Opinion. What we suck in with our Milk, we retain; the first Lessons of our Preceptors are the most prevalent, and take such deep Root, that

the Winds of a contrary Opinion are not able to ſhake them.

BUT as to your Anceſtors, ſaid I, were they all ſo ignorant of the Nature of Things, that not one of them doubted of the Reality of this pretended miraculous Birth? For, in ſhort, nothing can be more obvious than the Impoſſibility of the Union of the Sun with the Earth, and that thoſe two inanimate Creatures, being deſtitute of Underſtanding and Thought, are incapable of the Effects which are ſo abſurdly aſcrib'd to them. Indeed, ſaid the King, there were ſome of a contrary Opinion, but no body durſt declare it, becauſe if they had, the Populace were ſo prepoſſeſs'd in favour of this idle Notion, that they would have been ready to have cut 'em in pieces. Beſides, the Kings, every now and then, made uſe of a very extraordinary Stratagem to put them out of the World, which contributed not a little to fortify the others in their Opinion. They had contriv'd a ſubterraneous Paſſage from the Palace to the Temple, under this Footſtool, where there was a great deep Well, and when any Perſon was accus'd of having ſaid any thing tending to invalidate the Myſtery of the Birth of the firſt Man, which was accounted no leſs than Blaſphemy, he was oblig'd to appear before the Court, where the Governors never fail'd to condemn him to the Mines: But the King, in order to be reputed a merciful Prince, immediately revok'd the Sentence, on pretence that it had not been paſs'd in due Form, and according to the Rules of Equity, and order'd the Aſſembly to repair to the Senate

at

at Midnight, with all that had a mind to be Spectators, nor did he fail to be upon his Throne at the Time appointed. Then one of his Sons, Brothers, or neareſt Kindred, brought the Criminal before him, with his Hands ty'd behind his Back, and made him ſit upon the Footſtool juſt now mention'd: And the King, with his Eyes fix'd on the Ground, pronounc'd four Verſes with a loud Voice, in which, after applauding the Juſtice of his Mother Earth, he call'd on her inſtantly to ſwallow up either of the two that was moſt guilty in the Sight of Heaven.

AT that ſame time, a Perſon that lay conceal'd under the Stage, unbolted a Trap-Door made on purpoſe in the Footſtool, and the poor Victim ſunk down all at once into the deep Well underneath, which was done ſo ſuddenly and dexterouſly, that the Door was ſhut again as ſoon as open'd, ſo that it was hardly to be perceiv'd. Nevertheleſs, in order to play their Game ſure, they took care that the Place ſhould not be very much illuminated; beſides, as the Footſtool was plac'd high, the Governors and others preſent, who were ſitting or kneeling, could not well ſee what paſs'd above, where, one of thoſe concern'd in the Secret, pretending as if he ſaw the Earth open, made a great Noiſe, ſtarted back, and cry'd out as loud as if he was really afraid of being ſwallow'd up alive with the guilty Perſon.

BUT how were thoſe Impoſtures diſcover'd, ſaid I? The King's Prieſts, reply'd *Buſtrol*, ſeeing their Maſter baniſh'd, and the Face of Affairs quite chang'd, propos'd, on condition that they might not be puniſh'd, to diſcover every pernicious

Thing they knew, for they were not only privy to the Secret, but engag'd by an Oath to aſſiſt in thoſe cruel Executions. The ſubterraneous Paſſage is ſtill in being, and when you pleaſe I'll ſhew it to you. As to the Well, it is quite fill'd up, and the Trap-Door was chang'd with the reſt, and made a Part of the Cieling.

ANOTHER Impoſture which was carry'd on ſeveral Centuries, is this. When there happen'd to be any great Debates betwixt the Sovereign and his Subjects, which threaten'd his Family with ſome fatal Revolution, a Perſon who could be truſted with the Secret, us'd to ſteal up into the Dome, between the Cupola and the Cieling, where, when the Council was aſſembled, he bawl'd out as loud as he could, thro' a Hole made for the Purpoſe, which anſwer'd the Centre of the Copper Sun in the middle of the Edifice, *My Son is righteous, and you are wicked.* This Voice, which rattled over their Heads like Thunder, was extremely ſurpriſing to the Aſſembly, and never fail'd of the deſired Effect. Some of them perhaps might have a Suſpicion, but the Generality were ready to ſwear that thoſe Words were utter'd by the Sun himſelf; and perhaps they would not have ſuffer'd any Man that had but ſeem'd to entertain the leaſt Suſpicion, to have gone unpuniſh'd.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Containing the Ceremonies at the Births and Burials in this Country, the manner of adminiſtring Juſtice, and many other Remarkables.

OUR Diſcourſe was interrupted by a Domeſtic who came in puffing and blowing, to tell the King that *Mela* was brought to Bed of a Male Child. He had been marry'd but two Years to his firſt Wife, ſo that he was Twenty-ſeven Years of Age, which I mention, becauſe it muſt be noted, that the King cannot marry but at Twenty-five, nor other Men till they are Thirty, whereas the Females are marrigeable at Twenty. Since that time he had marry'd two more. He had two Daughters by the firſt Wife, and one by the Second. She that had now brought him a Son, and whoſe Father was Marſhal of one of the neighbouring Cantons, was the Third, and as ſhe is the lawful Queen, we will diſtinguiſh her from the reſt by the Title of Empreſs, according to the Law of the Country, which properly gives this Title to none but that Wife of the Sovereign who brings him a Succeſſor to the Crown. We congratulated the King on the Birth of this young Prince, and gave him to underſtand that we heartily wiſh'd he might reign happily after him. He ſeem'd to be pleas'd at our Compliment, and in order to convince us of it the more, order'd us to follow him, that we might be Witneſſes of the

Ceremony which Cuſtom oblig'd him to obſerve for giving a Name to the Infant.

HE went out, accompany'd by two of his Brothers, his Cook, whoſe Employment is very conſiderable, and his Steward. The Empreſs expected him in a magnificent Bed, as well for the Sculpture, as other Ornaments with which it was enrich'd. As ſoon as ſhe ſaw him, ſhe ſat upright, and Care was taken to cover her Shoulders with a Mantle of red Goats Hair, fring'd and embroider'd, and lin'd with Ermin as white as Snow. After ſhe had deſired the King to permit her to kiſs his Hand, ſhe expreſs'd her Joy that God had granted her a Son, becauſe it gave her the Honour of being Empreſs of ſo great a Kingdom. Then a Chaplain ſtepp'd forwards, who, according to his Orders, thank'd God in the Name of the King, Queen, and all the People, for the Favour he had now granted them; and I can truly ſay, that his Eloquence, added to the Submiſſion and Zeal with which he acquitted himſelf, pierc'd my very Soul. He expatiated at large upon the Nothingneſs of Man, upon the infinite Greatneſs of the Monarch of the World, upon the Care which his Providence continually takes of his Creatures, notwithſtanding their Diſproportion, and the immenſe Diſtance which ſeparates Beings ſo different. He ſhew'd wherein that Care conſiſted, and there he took occaſion to treat of the Virtues neceſſarily requiſite for a good King, and how God had given them one who in every reſpect deſerv'd the ſincere Affections of his People. Then he talk'd concerning the young Prince whom he had now granted them, of the Obligations

tions they ow'd him for so many Benefits, and concluded with a Million of Thanks: So that this Act of Devotion continu'd at least an Hour. Afterwards the Infant was presented to the King, who call'd him *Baïol*, i. e. *Benign*. Then they serv'd up preserv'd Fruits, and Sweetmeats confected with Honey, which is certainly better than the best Sugar in *America*. Besides this, we drank most excellent Metheglin, and other Liquors not a whit inferior to ours, Wine only excepted, of which they have not a Drop, there being not so much as a Vine thro' the whole Country. The Ceremony of the Empress's Coronation was put off till after her Lying-in, which was over at the end of eighteen Days, but as, like the former, it consisted only of Thanksgiving, 'tis needless for me to repeat it. Mean time, this is not only observ'd in the King's Palace, but in all the Cantons of the Kingdom, the Moment they receive the News.

AS to the Method of spreading their News, this is the Place, if I am not mistaken, where I ought to observe, that every Day from Twelve at Noon to One o' Clock, each Village sends two Men into every Road of the neighbouring Cantons, on which Pillars are set up at equal distance, within the Sound of a Speaking-Trumpet from one to the other. If therefore any thing happens extraordinary at Court, that is capable of being express'd in a few Words, as for Instance, the Death, Marriage, or Sickness of the King, the Birth of a Prince, *&c.* those who are sent from Court publish it to their Neighbours, and they to others, so that from the one to the other it flies

with

with ſuch Speed, that in leſs than a Hour 'tis known all over the Kingdom. When there is no News they only ſay, *All is well.* In like manner, when the Cantons have any thing to make known to the Court, their Trumpeters make uſe of the very ſame Methods. If there are any Packets or Letters to carry, there are Meſſengers for the Purpoſe, who ſet out with them from Court at Five of the Clock in the Morning, to the neighbouring Villages, from whence others ſet out at Six, and carry what they have to others that ſtart at Seven, and ſo of the reſt. As for great Burdens they make uſe of Boats, which go backwards and forwards very regularly, and without Expence to any one, becauſe the Children or Domeſtics of every Family are employ'd in navigating them by turns.

SOON after the Empreſs was brought to Bed, the States or Deputies of the Governors repair'd to Court to exerciſe Juſtice, and to put all things in order. This Aſſembly continues Twenty-two Days, and abundance of Buſineſs was diſpatch'd in it, in moſt of which I may ſay without Vanity, I had indirectly ſome Share. As theſe Gentlemen met only in a Morning, and devoted their Afternoons partly to Pleaſure, and partly to the Conſideration of the Points which were to come before them next Seſſion, the King could not help coming as uſual to ſpend ſome Moments in the Evening with us, not ſo much to ſee our Works, as to converſe with us freely concerning the Buſineſs that was to come upon the Tapis next Day, as to which, he never fail'd to ask us what would be done in ſuch a Caſe in *Europe*.

ONE

ONE Day amongſt the reſt, he told us, how a young Man of a very remote Canton, being often ill us'd by his Father, who ſeem'd to bear a mortal Hatred to him, took the Opportunity, as they went out together in a Gondola to catch Fiſh, to throw him into the Canal, and ſeeing him paddling juſt under Water, he held him down with the End of his Oar, for fear he ſhould riſe, and puniſh him for his Raſhneſs. The Father who was quite ſtunn'd at firſt, recover'd his Spirits by Degrees, and as he could ſwim perfectly well, he div'd to the Bottom, and then riſing about two Paces diſtance, he ſtruck away with all the Speed he could make to the other Shore, in order to eſcape his Son's Fury. While the one was endeavouring to eſcape, and the other reſolving to purſue him, and knock out his Brains, an old Pine-Tree planted on the Side of this Canal, fell in all at once as if the Earth had broke away, and ſo entangled the Bay in the Gondola with its Branches, that it was impoſſible for him to ſtir, tho' he was not hurt in any one Part. The old Man, who was got Aſhore by this time, ſeeing the Boat under the Tree, and no Sign of his Son, was touch'd with Pity, and did not doubt but the Fall of the Tree had kill'd him. He went and knock'd at the firſt Houſe he came to, and having rais'd the People out of their Beds, it being then pretty early in the Morning, he told them, that as he was going to ſuch a Place with his Boat, a great rotten Tree broke away all on a ſudden, and fell upon him with ſuch Violence, that it had knock'd him into the Water, and bruis'd his Son to Pieces. At this, all the People ran to ſee what

was

was the Matter, and three of them went in their Wherry to relieve the Lad if he happen'd to be alive. The Fellow who had not open'd his Lips all the while, finding himſelf taken in a manner before he was aware, and that the Men were buſy to ſeparate the Boughs of the Tree that they might ſee what was become of him, fell a crying, and ſaid, *O Father! pray don't kill me, I own I was to blame, and that I deſerve your Hatred with a Vengeance, for 'tis no Thanks to me that you are not dead at this Inſtant, but I beg your Pardon a thouſand times.* The more he cry'd out, the more the others ſtruggled to diſintangle him, and the ſtronger was the poor Wretch's Opinion that they were come to cut his Throat. *Mercy, dear Father! Mercy!* ſaid he again, *it was not I, properly ſpeaking, but a curſed Fit of Paſſion which I abhor, that prompted me to lay my ſacrilegious Hands upon your Perſon. In the Name of God be pacify'd.* The Father who heard all this, knew not what Countenance to put on; he would gladly have puniſh'd his Child, but he did not care that the People ſhould know the Cauſe of it, which was however impoſſible. Tho' the Gondola was clear of the Branches of the Tree, and the young Man ſaw a multitude who upon the Rumor of his Diſaſter came to aſſiſt him, and who, to be ſure, would not have ſuffer'd the Father to ſacrifice him on the Spot to his Vengeance, he made ſo many Shrugs and Wrigglings, and us'd ſuch Expreſſions, that he condemn'd himſelf in Preſence of 100 Witneſſes; ſo that it was not in the Power of the Father to diſculpate him as he would gladly have done. Several Fathers of Families

milies who were there, apprehenſive of what might be the Conſequence, ſeiz'd the young Fellow, and carry'd him before a Judge, who, after having ſent for the Father, and examin'd them both firſt Face to Face, and then ſeparately, condemn'd the Lad to the Mines for 20 Years. The Father was diſſatisfy'd with the Sentence, becauſe he knew in his Conſcience he had provok'd his Son to Wrath, by his rough Treatment of him, and therefore he advis'd him privately to appeal to the Governor of their particular Precinct, and if he ſhould confirm the Sentence, to appeal at laſt to the Court itſelf. The Governor, *ſaid the King*, to whom the Cauſe was referr'd, was not willing to decide it, and for this Reaſon it is to be argued To-morrow before me; but in good Truth, I ſcarce know how to determine it. What Age is the young Man? *ſaid I*, He is twenty two, *reply'd the King*. Very well, Sir, *ſaid I*, he would be put to Death in our Parts, and nothing could ſave him. But ſince you are not ſo ſevere here, ſince the Son deteſts what he has done, begs Pardon for it with all his Heart, and ſince the Father confeſſes he was the Cauſe of putting the Son into ſuch a Paſſion; 'tis my Opinion, with Submiſſion to your Majeſty, that it would be ſufficient if the Lad was whipp'd with Rods, and ſentenc'd to carry a Label on his Forehead with theſe Words in large Characters, REBEL TO HIS FATHER, on Condition however that if he behave well, he ſhall be diſcharg'd from that Ignominy at a Year's End. Your Advice is excellent, *ſaid the King*, and if I have any Credit, that ſhall be the Sentence. As ſoon as the Council was aſſembled,

the

the Offence was mention'd, and every one gave their ſeveral Opinions. Some were for confirming the former Sentence, others would have it that the young Man ought to make *Amende honourable*, and have one of his Hands cut off before he was baniſh'd. Some were for ſending him to the Bottom of the Mine for his Life; and others were of another Opinion. But when the King had heard what they all had to ſay, he propos'd his Opinion which was approv'd by the Aſſembly, and executed that very Day. Both Parties went to Court to expreſs their Obligations for pronouncing ſo mild a Sentence. The King who was willing that I ſhould have the Honour of it, told them, that if they had any Body to thank, it was I, and no Body elſe. Accordingly they came to thank me in the moſt civil and ſubmiſſive Manner that could be, and then they return'd home, where, as I was told afterwards, they liv'd together in perfect Harmony.

'TIS not to be conceiv'd, how conſiderable this Trifle made us appear to the Deputies. *Solomon*'s Award was nothing compar'd to ours, and if ſome of them could have had their Wills, we ſhould have been created extraordinary Members of their Body. By that time they aſſembled again, our Clockwork was in a manner finiſh'd. Every one had the Curioſity to come and ſee it, and thought they could not praiſe it too much. *La Foret* was a very good Engraver, and tho' he knew how to gild, he had acquainted himſelf ſo well with the Cuſtom of the Country to gild with Copper, which is much finer there than it is in our Parts, that the minuteſt Piece had a wonder-

ful

ful Luſtre infinitely beyond the Clock which we had made for our Canton. But it had quite another Appearance a Year after, when they ſaw the Clock erected over the Dome of the King's Houſe with ſix Sun-Dials round it pointing to the Hours, which was what we omitted in the former, beſides that the Baſin or Bell which was of Pewter and Copper mix'd, was at leaſt three times bigger, and had a much better Sound. As a Gratuity for this fine Piece of Work, the King honour'd each of us with a Governor's Robe, and gave Orders that we ſhould have the ſame Regard paid to us as they had. And in ſhort, we were treated with as much Reſpect as if we had been Princes. The Cooks and the Butler took care that nothing was wanting at our Table. Beer, Cider, Metheglin, and Punſ were as plenty with us as River-Water. The latter is a delicious Tipple, of which one may drink to Eternity and be never the worſe, and 'tis made of an admirable Fruit, in form like to a *Spaniſh* Melon. There's no ſort of Ragoo, Tarts or Paſties but what we had every Day, and as Partridges, which weigh here at leaſt four Pounds, and the Tsln, thoſe great Hens I have made mention of elſewhere, are very common here; we had Fowls of one ſort or other almoſt at every Meal; not to mention the excellent Fiſh which was infallibly ſerv'd up at every Dinner. The King himſelf alſo took us Abroad with him three Days ſucceſſively, in our Habits of Ceremony which is the greateſt Honour that this Monarch does to his Subjects.

ONE Morning as we were paſſing by the Weſt Side of the Temple, a Lad who went up to

ſee

ſee his Father work at the Dome, leaning over the Gallery to ſee us paſs along, fell down flat upon his Stomach, and kill'd himſelf. The King, who would never let me reſt, took Occaſion from this unexpected Fall, to ſtart an Objection to me concerning the Circular Motion of the Earth. It put a Thought into my Head, *ſaid he*, which never enter'd there before, *viz.* That if the Earth had its Revolution, as you would fain perſuade me it has; the Boy, if he had fallen ever ſo quick, muſt have pitch'd at a conſiderable diſtance from the Wall of this Structure, whereas, if I am not miſtaken, he touch'd it with one of his Arms. For, in ſhort, the Globe of the Earth is very large, and ſuppoſing it makes one compleat Tour in 24 Hours, its Parts muſt needs paſs extremely ſwift. 'Tis eaſy, Sir, ſaid I, to ſolve this Objection. A Terreſtrial Degree, you know, contains 60 Miles, by which Number if you only multiply 360 Degrees, the Circumference of the Earth under the Equator will be 21600 *Italian* Miles, or 21,600000 Geometrical Paces. Now divide this Sum by 24 Hours, and the 900000 which will reſult from that Operation by 60 Minutes, you will perceive that the Earth muſt make an Arch of 15000 Paces in a Minute of an Hour, and conſequently one of 250 Paces in a Second, which is leſs Time than a Body can take in falling from the Height of this great Structure. But, Sir, *continued I*, you ought not to conſider the Air as independent on the Earth, for it turns equally with it, no more nor no leſs than the Water of the Sea which is confin'd within its own Limits, and both the one and the other make

make a Part of this great Whole, ſo that to fall into either, is in this reſpect the ſame Thing. Mean time, there's another Reaſon confirm'd by Experience, which tells us, that every Body deſcending by its own Motion, or by a Motion which may be deem'd voluntary, muſt neceſſarily pitch upon that very Point to which it correſponded the firſt Moment of its Fall. Therefore ſuppoſing I were at the Top-Maſt Head of one of the talleſt Maſts that our Men of War carry in *Europe*, and ſhould let fall a Bullet of what Size you pleaſe, 'tis certain that it will always keep at the ſame Diſtance from the Maſt, 'till it falls upon the Deck, be the Wind and Tide which carry the Ship ever ſo rapid, from whence it follows, that this Body does not fall perpendicularly as it ſeems, but neceſſarily runs thro' a parabolical Line, becauſe tho' it deſcends by a ſingle Motion in Appearance, yet it partakes of two Motions at once, *viz.* the artificial one of the Ship, which is form'd according to the Plan of the Horizon, and its natural Motion from Top to Bottom. Which is ſo true, that if the Veſſel was to ſtop ſhort, the very Moment that the Bullet was dropp'd, it would not in that Caſe fall down perpendicularly by the Side of the Maſt, but a conſiderable Diſtance before it. So it often happens to the Horſemen in our Country, who when they are galloping at full Speed, perhaps the skittiſh Beaſt frighten'd at ſome Object makes a ſudden Stand which ſhakes the Rider, who is ſtill ſuppos'd to be leaning forwards, out of his Saddle, and throws him ſeveral Paces over his Head. 'Tis for this Reaſon alſo that your clever Sportſ-

men,

men, tho' perhaps they don't know why, ſeldom ſhoot flying without taking their Aim a little before the Bird, to the End that the Bullet or Arrow may thereby acquire a Side Motion, which together with the direct Motion forms a Curve Line by means of which it certainly hits the Mark. I underſtand all this very plain, *ſaid the King*, and there is nothing extraordinary in it, becauſe the ſame Thing happens to Bodies which are puſh'd with Violence from any Height, by a Line parallel to the Horizon; for 'tis evident, that the very Moment they come out of the Hand that throws them, they fall and muſt, as you ſay, before they come to the Ground, deſcribe a Line like to thoſe which are form'd by the Section of a Cone which is parallel to its oppoſite Side.

YOU are in the right, Sir, *ſaid I*, but there's ſomething wonderful in this which to many People appears a Paradox, *viz.* That if you take one of thoſe Pieces of Ordnance ſo common with us, I mean a Cannon, levell'd at one of the higheſt Towers, and if at the very Inſtant of diſcharging it, a Bullet be let fall of the ſame Form and Size as that which the Cannon is charg'd with, notwithſtanding the one is ſhot a Mile off, and the other falls down ſimply by a perpendicular Line, yet they will both come to the Ground at the ſame Inſtant. Indeed, *ſaid the King*, that is ſurprizing, and I own, I ſhould never have thought it; but I ſee very plainly now, that it muſt needs be ſo, becauſe tho' the Bullet is carry'd a great Way, nevertheleſs its Motion from Top to Bottom muſt have its Courſe, and be every whit as rapid.

YET

YET these fine Examples don't set me clear enough in the Point of the Earth's Motion. Pray, how comes it that so violent an Agitation does not shake it into a Million of Pieces? Well, Sir, *said I*, take a Confectioner's Vessel made of white Earth; let it be of a round Form, and the Sides low and perpendicular to the Bottom. Put into it a Thimblefull or two of clear Water, and in this Water a small Quantity of the Filings of Copper, fine Sand, and the Grating of red Wax; and to supply the Place of Glass, of which you have none in this Country, cover the Vessel with a Lid very close, then cement it with a little Potter's Clay, and put it upon an Axis, to which you shall give Motion. When this Vessel has been turn'd about a little, if you take off the Lid, which was only plac'd on to hinder the Water from going out during its Agitation, you will see that all the Parts of the Matter put into it stick to the Sides of the Vessel. An evident Proof that if the Heavens turn'd which are here represented by these Sides, the Earth would necessarily be forc'd to quit its present Situation, and range itself against their concave Superficies or their Extremities. And another undeniable Proof which confirms the former, is, that if the Whirl be stopp'd, so that the Firmament or the Side of the Ship turns no more, the Water, which continues its Motion, and by consequence departs in Proportion, from the Centre of the Vessel which contains it, forces the Particles of Copper, Sand, and Wax to quit the Sides to which they stuck so fast, and to approach to the Centre where they form a round Mass, the lowest Region of which is Copper, the second Sand,

Sand, and the laſt Wax. From hence it appears, that if the ſubtile Matter which encompaſſes the Earth be put in Agitation, 'tis ſufficient to oblige all the Terreſtrial Parts to rendezvous in one Globe towards their Centre: Which likewiſe ſhews us by the way, that 'tis impoſſible for a Stone caſt into this ſubtile Matter, to reſt in it one Moment, but muſt for the ſame Reaſons abandon the Aerial Region, and repair to other Bodies of its own Species, in which properly conſiſts Gravitation.

REALLY, *ſaid the King*, you have often talk'd to me about Vortexes, the Alterations which Aſtronomers obſerve in the different Aſpects of the Planets, the Motion of the Sun round its own Centre, the Spots upon the Face of it which are a Confirmation of that Motion, becauſe as this advances, they change their Situation, as well as about the Periods which the other Planets deſcribe either round themſelves, or round the Sun; but I never yet heard any Aſſertion ſo bold as what you have juſt now advanc'd. I ſhould be glad if you would let me have the Machine you ſpoke of, to the end that by examining it nicely, we may be able to talk of it a little, more particularly: But it were to be wiſh'd that the Lid you put upon the Veſſel was tranſparent, becauſe then one might eaſily ſee what paſs'd in the Veſſel without taking it off. I will obey your Orders, Sir, *ſaid I*, and if our Parchment won't do for the Purpoſe, I will ſupply it by a round Hole of an Inch or two in Diameter, which I will make in the middle of the Lid; for I am of Opinion that the reſt will be ſufficient to hinder the Water from

ſpurting

ſpurting out in its moſt vehement Agitation.

DURING this, one of the King's Brothers fell ſick, and died. I thought to have ſeen ſome Particularity at his Funeral, but was very much ſurpriz'd, that I did not obſerve the leaſt Circumſtance at it more than at common Interments. They only wrap up the Corps in a Robe of fine Linen, and then put it on a Bier, which is carry'd by two Men preceded by four of the neareſt Relations, and attended by two Men and two Women, marry'd or not marry'd, and by four young Perſons of both Sexes who mourn all the Way, and converſe about his good Qualities. When they come to the End of the Place where the Deceas'd liv'd, they throw him into a Grave made for the Purpoſe, which they immediately cloſe up again, and erect a little Pyramid of Wood upon it, on which are mark'd the Name and Age of the Perſon underneath, after which every one goes Home, and they never talk of him more than if there had been no ſuch Perſon in the World. The King's Brother was bury'd after the ſame Manner; two of his Brothers (for the Prince is exempt from it) with his Mother, and one of his Siſters were the only Perſons of the Convoy, beſides the Mourners who are People that attend on theſe Occaſions purely for the ſake of a Meal's Meat. Then it was that I heard that the Brothers and Siſters of the Kings of this Country are forbid to marry, which is only permitted to the eldeſt Son of the Royal Family, and even he can have but one Wife before he is King.

AS

AS to a Wife, I can't avoid telling you here how our Monarch recover'd one in my Preſence worthy to wear a Diadem. He had form'd a Deſign a long time to make a Viſit to the Weſt Part of the Kingdom; but as he intended that we ſhould accompany him, and the Work we had in hand was too exquiſite in his Opinion to be interrupted, there was a Neceſſity for ſtaying 'till it was finiſh'd; then came bad Weather, afterwards the Diet; but when this was broke up, and the fine Seaſon was advanc'd, the King was reſolv'd to lay hold of it. He made up but a ſmall Equipage, and only took 10 Perſons along with us in his Retinue. He was mounted on a ſmall but magnificent Chaiſe with two Wheels drawn by four white He-Goats, which had each a great black Beard, and Horns of a prodigious Size. His Train and Baggage were in two Gondolas, in each of which were four Rowers, and four to relieve them.

I WAS overjoy'd to be of this Party, becauſe I had never yet travell'd this Way. Moſt of the Inhabitants of this Frontier are employ'd in making Bricks, Potters Ware, and all Sorts of Porcelane according as the Soil is proper for the different Sorts of Work. We paſs'd thro' no Village but all the People of Conſequence came out to ſee the King, who ſometimes alighted for the Purpoſe, and walk'd very ſlowly that they might have the better Opportunity of viewing him. One Day as we were at a Place where there was ſuch a Crowd about him that he could ſcarce get out of it, he ſpy'd a young Woman whoſe Charms made him fall in Love with her. He call'd her to him,

him, and having ſurvey'd her from Head to Foot, and found her more charming near at hand than at a Diſtance, he ſent for the Father, and ask'd him what Age ſhe was? The honeſt Man having already promis'd her to another, and gueſſing at the King's Intention, knew not what Anſwer to make, but after a ſmall Pauſe, he ſaid to him, Sir, She is not yet marriageable, and by conſequence neither to be ſold nor given away. The Girl being more ambitious of the Title of Queen than of the Wife of a Carpenter, which was the Craft of the Fellow that was to have her, ſaid very pertly, 'Tis true, Sir, I am not marriageable, but I want only two Days to be 20 Years old. Very well, *reply'd the King*, we will ſtay, honeſt Man, 'till the Term is expir'd, rather than break in upon the Laws; but after To-morrow, bring your Daughter to Court that I may make her my Wife, and take care that no Body comes near her. Tho' the old Man thought it a great Honour to have the King for his Son-in-law, yet he was ſorry that he could not keep his Word with the Carpenter, which I choſe to mention here only to ſhew the Simplicity and Sincerity of the People of this Country. *Pao*, which was the Perſon's Name, was ready at the Time and Place appointed, and three Days after we arriv'd, he begg'd an Audience, and preſented his Daughter to the King in Preſence of his Chaplain, who return'd Thanks to God for it on the Spot. The Nuptials laſted three Days, after which *Pao* return'd Home with 100 *Kalu*, or Pieces of Copper in his Pocket, as Pay for his Daughter; but the poor young Woman having never had the Small-

Pox, was seiz'd with it three Months after, and died.

'Tis a prodigious Thing to consider the Multitudes of People which this plaguy Distemper carries off, there not being one in ten that escapes. The Generality of the Living never had it, and be they ever so old, so few are excus'd from it, that they seldom die of any other Disease. If this were not the Case, the Country would in all Appearance be exceeding populous, whereas at present 'tis but thinly inhabited, considering the Goodness of the Soil, and the Purity of the Air.

NOT long after this, the King made two or three other Conquests, so that in four Years after his first Marriage, he had seven Wives. My Comrade and I were at all those Solemnities, and had great Share of the Pleasures of them. Whereever we came, we were sure to be commended upon Account of our Clocks, tho' many People knew that I had the least Share in them.

THAT I might not go without my Reward, I told the King, that we had indeed adorn'd his Palace with a Machine, with which he had the Goodness to seem pleas'd, but that if he desir'd it, I would make him another to put up at the Front of the Temple which should be subject to no Variation, and be regulated by the Course of the Sun. I am convinc'd, *said the Monarch*, from the little Knowlege I have of Astronomy, that it would not be impossible to divide an artificial Day into any equal Parts by the Shade, which might be form'd from a Body in the Sun-shine, but we have had no Body here that I know of, who ever apply'd to it. Before I go to work upon it,

said

ſaid I, I muſt examine which way the Front of this Edifice ſtands. That's not neceſſary, *ſaid the King*, I know that it declines from Eaſt to North 22 Degrees 30 Minutes, and what is yet more, I know it by Experience. Pardon me, Sir, *ſaid I*, if I take the Freedom to ask you what Method you took to be ſure of the Fact. I caus'd a Board to be plan'd, *ſaid he*, perfectly ſmooth with ſeveral Circles drawn upon it by the Compaſs; and in the Centre I ſet up perpendicularly a Stile of Copper Wire, to the End of which hangs a Button as big as a ſmall Nut. This ſquare Inſtrument I place againſt the Wall of the Temple, and when the Sun is aſcended ſome Degrees above the Horizon, I ſtay till the Shadow of the Button of my Stile falls upon the Circumference of one of the Circles of the Board, when I mark that Place by a Point, and then with another Point I mark the Place on the oppoſite Side of the Circumference, where the Shadow falls in the Afternoon. I divide the Arch between theſe two Points into two equal Parts by a ſtraight Line which paſſes thro' the Centre of the Stile, which Line is the Meridian of the Place where I make the Operation. There are ſeveral Ways, *ſaid I*, whereby you may eaſily attain to the ſame End of which that you mention is one of the beſt I know; but I will make you a vertical Sun-Dial according to the above Declination of the Front of the Temple. No, *ſaid the King*, as the Point in Queſtion is only drawing of Lines, you muſt do me the Pleaſure to teach me the Conſtruction of 'em. I conſented willingly to his Demand, ſo that we made a Sun-Dial of 8 Foot broad, and 6 in height,

and another horizontal Dial of Copper, which was plac'd on a Pedeſtal of Agate of 8 Sides before the King's Palace, and both had the Signs of the Zodiac upon them. Theſe two Machines ſupply'd freſh Matter of Admiration to thoſe who ſaw them; and I make no doubt but they were of more Service to them than the others after our Departure, becauſe not a Man in the Kingdom knew how to keep them, much leſs to make them.

LA FORET had ſuch a Senſe of the Civilities he and I receiv'd every Day from the whole Court, and was ſo deſirous to ſhew he was not ungrateful, that without ſaying one Word to me he ſet about a Pocket-Watch, and had actually finiſh'd it before I perceiv'd any thing of the matter. Tho' he work'd much better in large than in ſmall Things, yet a Watch in a Country where there never was one before, was a Jewel of ineſtimable Value. As ſoon as he finiſh'd it, he went to wait on the King, and after having complimented him on the Obligations we had to him, he took the Watch out of his Pocket, and intreated his Acceptance of it as a Token of his ſincere Gratitude. The King having view'd it Inſide and Outſide, was perfectly aſtoniſh'd, admir'd the Beauty and Uſefulneſs of this little Machine, and proteſted to him that he ſhould never deſire any thing of him in his Diſpoſal, but it ſhould be at his Service.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

More Adventures of the Author, and his Comrade, till their Departure from Court.

AS the King went often to see his Wives, there is no question but he was fond to shew them his Watch, and that every one admir'd the Genius of the Workman. For tho' they had seen the Clock a thousand times, and seem'd even astonish'd at its Performance, they thought it nothing in comparison to this pretty Instrument, which, though small, went as regularly, and pointed out all the Parts of the Day as exactly as the great one.

LIDOLA in particular, who was the King's second Wife, gave broad Hints that she long'd to be Mistress of it; but the King, who did not care to part with it, and indeed could not, without raising the Jealousy of all his other Ladies, and making the Empress her self uneasy, pretended not to understand her Meaning. *Lidola* was so disobliged by it, that after Supper, when she was to have entertain'd the King, who had given her to understand that he would spend that Night with her (which he did very frequently, because he was much more enamour'd with her than with any of the other Ladies) she counterfeited an Indisposition, and sent to desire the King not to come to her that Night. The King, mistrusting nothing of the Matter, sent next Morning to inquire after her Health, which he repeated for several Days

together. But at laſt perceiving no Alteration in her for the better, and that ſhe not only receiv'd his Meſſengers very cavalierly, but that as he himſelf ſaw her *en paſſant*, ſhe look'd upon him with a Coldneſs enough to have chill'd the very Blood in his Veins, he gueſs'd what ſhe had taken Pet at, but wou'd not ſeem to know it; and having a mind to ſee how far ſhe would carry her Indifference, he left off his Viſits by degrees, and gave himſelf up ſo intirely to his laſt Queen, that he was very ſeldom with any but her.

LA FORET, who knew no more than my ſelf what had paſs'd, was ſurpris'd one Evening, as he was walking under the Galleries, with a Voice that call'd him by his Name. Turning about to it very haſtily, and being ſuddenly ſtruck with Aſtoniſhment at the Beauty of the fineſt Lady that ever he had ſeen in his Life (for ſhe was not veil'd, tho' 'tis an eſtabliſh'd Rule of the Country, that marry'd Women are not ſeen in Mens Company without a Veil, which almoſt hides their Faces) he ſtood with his Eyes fix'd upon her, and had not Power to ask what was her Pleaſure. Fair Genius, ſaid ſhe, you ſeem to be ſurpris'd, but don't be frighten'd; I only call'd to you to let you know how glad I am to ſee you whenever you paſs by my Apartment, and to give you this Melon. There, take it, and farewel. Then ſhe dropp'd the Fruit, and immediately withdrew and ſhut her Caſement.

LA FORET could never be tax'd either with Stupidity or Ignorance, yet he knew not what to think of this Frolick. Tho' he was not nimble enough to catch the Melon before it fell to the Ground,

Ground, he ſnatch'd it up without ſaying one Word, and brought it to our Chamber where he told me in Confidence what had paſs'd. I immediately took the Melon, and going to ſtick my Knife into it, I perceiv'd it had been open'd already very nicely towards the Stalk, which made me cautious in cutting it, for fear of ſpoiling any thing that might happen to be within it, where, inſtead of the little Kernels which are by Nature contain'd in that excellent Fruit, we found a Scroll of the fineſt Vellum, with Writing on it in the Language of the Country, to this Effect.

I HAVE ſeen you paſs by my Window a thouſand times, but ſcarce ever heard you talk. The Judgment which I form of your Mind, by your eaſy Deportment, and your uncommon Proaductions, excites my Curioſity to have the Happineſs of your Converſation when I am diſengag'd. I fancy that you can ſay nothing but what is very good. Prepare therefore to give me that Satisfaction. I expect you to-morrow without fail at my Door. Be ſure to be there at the firſt Stroke of your curious Machine, after Midnight, and you'll oblige

LIDOLA.

I WAS alarm'd at the reading of this Billet, and told *La Foret* what I thought of it, very ſeriouſly; but it all ſignify'd nothing. He was luſty, well-proportion'd, as vigorous as a Man could poſſibly be at 30 Years of Age, and no Enemy to the Sex. The Friendſhip the King ſhew'd to us, induc'd him to think that he would be far from ſuſpecting him of a Deſign upon any of his Wives,

and therefore, without weighing the Conſequences, he reſolv'd to lay hold of the Opportunity at all Events. What confounded him moſt was his want of Eloquence, and the other neceſſary Talents for expreſſing himſelf politely; for he came of an obſcure Family, and had ſeen but little of the World. As he knew not how to behave, and had a better Opinion of me than of himſelf, he would fain have engag'd me to take the firſt Step, and to pave the way for him: But beſides that, his Stature and mine were very different, he being at leaſt taller than me by the Head, which would have been too groſs a Cheat to paſs, I had other Reaſons againſt embarking in an Affair of this Nature. But all this did not diſcourage *La Foret*.

NEXT Day he dreſs'd as ſprucely as he could, equipp'd himſelf as a Galant ought to do when he goes to viſit his Miſtreſs, and ſtudy'd every thing that might contribute to her Pleaſure. Being thus rigg'd, he took his Leave of me, and at the appointed time went to the Place of Aſſignation. The Fair One, who probably hearken'd for his coming, open'd the Door to him ſoftly, and after injoining him by a Signal to profound Silence, conducted him into her Cloſet. She was in her *Deſhabille*, which was very fine, and notwithſtanding the careleſs Air of it, ſeem'd to be the Effect of Contrivance. Her Head and Shoulders were cover'd with a Veil of fine Linen, in which there had been an infinite Expence of Art; but whether it was by Chance, or by Deſign, under pretence of handling the ſaid Veil, and toſſing it forwards and backwards to hide what Modeſty ſhould have taught her to conceal, ſhe often gave a Glimpſe

a Glimpſe of Beauties enough to have fir'd a Heart not near ſo ſuſceptible of Love as *La Foret*'s, who could not ſtand thoſe Charms. For his very Eyes were dazzled with the Glare of ſo many Wonders, and, as if he had been perfectly inchanted, he had not Strength to open his Lips, notwithſtanding the firm Reſolution he had made to ſay abundance of fine things to her.

LIDOLA perceiving her Lover ſo mute, fetch'd a deep Sigh, and ſaid to him with a moſt languiſhing Countenance, *I'm in love with you, fair Stranger; I did not imagine I ſhould have had the Trouble of telling you ſo, becauſe I thought you would eaſily gueſs it: Your Silence does Violence to my Modeſty; I am aſham'd that I have let fall the Expreſſion; but make a prudent Uſe of it, and remember to be diſcreet, if you would be happy with Ladies.* *La Foret* anſwer'd with very great Reſpect, 'Don't reproach me, Madam, I beſeech you; 'my very Silence has an Eloquence in it which 'muſt fully apprize you of the Sentiments of my 'Heart. Tho' your Preſence, continued he, has 'depriv'd me of the Faculty of Speech, it is on-'ly ſuſpended to give me the more Leiſure to 'contemplate the Delicacy of your Charms. 'Words are not always in ſeaſon. There are 'Moments when the Eyes expreſs themſelves in-'finitely better than the Tongue can, ſo that 'without being a Conjurer, a Perſon, by obſerv-'ing their Motions, may know the Sentiments of 'the Soul. I confeſs I was in the wrong to keep 'Silence, but it was well for me that I did not 'ſpeak, becauſe the fineſt Expreſſions that I could 'have thought of in a Language with which I

'am so little acquainted, would not have fetch'd 'that from your pretty Mouth in an Age, which 'Silence has drawn from it in an Instant. What! 'you in love with me, Madam? O Heavens! 'how shall I contain my Joy at so tender a Con-'fession! Who would ever have imagin'd that a 'Queen could debase her self so much as to de-'clare such a Kindness for the lowest of her 'Slaves. Persist, I beg you; That shall be the 'utmost Boundary of the greatest of all my 'Wishes, because undoubtedly I never ought to 'think of any thing else.

Just as she was going to answer him, a Waiting-maid bolted into the Room, to the Terror of our Lover, who knew not the Meaning of it at first, and so great was his Surprise, that he could not hide it. But *Lidola* dissembled hers, for fear of putting him into Confusion. I had given Orders, she said to him, for some dry Sweetmeats, and a Glass of Mead to be brought; you perceive they are obey'd. I hope you'll meet with something or other in this Bason that you like. *La Foret*, who was too impatient for amorous Endearments to mind Sweetmeats, was mad to find their Conversation interrupted by an impertinent Witness. He had much rather have spent the Time in Dalliance, than have wasted the precious Moments in Eating. But for the sake of Complaisance, he was under a Necessity of admiring the Extent of her Civility, and he even acknowledg'd how much he was oblig'd to her for it. The Fair One, who was not willing to omit any Proof of her Tenderness for him, took one half of a Nectarin, and wantonly put it to his Mouth. Once she

ſhe pluck'd from his Lips what he had in part chew'd, and eat it with an inconceivable Greedineſs; at another time ſhe made him bite a Piece which ſhe held between her white Teeth; in ſhort, there was no wanton Air which ſhe did not invent to increaſe the Paſſion of the new Lover.

THE Days were then about Sixteen Hours in length, the Sun not being far from *Capricorn*, and that Place being ſituate in 51 Degrees, and 20 Minutes South Latitude, ſo that they were toying with one another, when the Darkneſs or rather the Twilight vaniſh'd, and the Torch of Heaven was riſing to gild the enamell'd Fields with his ſplendid Rays. The Damſel being the firſt to obſerve it, told the Queen of it, at which *La Foret* was offended, and even took the Liberty to reproach her for not having appointed him ſooner, becauſe he ſaid it was not worth his while to come thither for ſo ſhort a Stay. Tho' I'm a little out of favour with the King at preſent, reply'd the charming *Lidola*, I am not ſure that he will neglect me long; the Fancy may take him to come and ſee me in the Morning; and tho' he ſhould not, there are other People that have an Eye upon what we do. I ſhould paſs my Time but ill, if any body ſhould ſee you go out of my Apartment: Let us act upon ſure Grounds, and for this time do you withdraw. If you have a Pocket-Watch like to that which you gave the King, take care to bring it with you when you come again, that we may know how much time we have to ſpend; for we mayn't always have People near us to tell us how it paſſes. When ſhe had ſaid theſe kind Words, ſhe fell on his Neck,

Neck, kiſs'd him very tenderly, and immediately withdrew. The Time flies away inſenſibly at ſuch agreeable Interviews; nevertheleſs *La Foret* had not ſo far loſt the Uſe of his Reaſon, but he knew very well that it was high Time for him to be gone. Therefore he pull'd out a *Kala*, which he gave to the Maid, and after recommending himſelf to her Friendſhip, ſtole out ſoftly, and return'd home.

THE firſt thing he was bent on at his Return, was to impart to me in Confidence what had paſs'd with his Miſtreſs. To hear him talk, never Man travers'd ſo much Land in the Territories of Love, in ten Years, as he had been doing in an Hour; in ſhort, he was in full Poſſeſſion, and only wanted the Fruition. 'O Heavens! '(ſaid I) how credulous are Lovers, and how 'eaſy is it for Love to impoſe on them! *La Fo-* '*ret*, *La Foret*, you are playing a Game that will 'infallibly ruine you. Gaming, Women, and 'Wine have a good Aſpect, I confeſs, but when 'made too familiar, are of no Value; they pro- 'duce ſhort Pleaſures, attended with long Repen- 'tance; their greateſt Sweets often change to 'Bitter; and their Payment is only in Tinſel, 'with which they who ſuffer their Eyes to be 'dazzled, are commonly deceiv'd. Remember 'what I now tell you: The Affair you are en- 'gag'd in is ſuch, that you'll repent of it more 'than once.' I might have moraliz'd thus till Doomſday, for all that I ſaid was to no purpoſe. My Friend thought of nothing but the Pleaſure he ſhould have, and turning his Back upon the Conſequences, was actually captivated by the

moſt

moſt flattering Ideas that his Mind was capable of forming. The poor Man was blinded to ſuch a Degree, that he did not ſee the Precipice he was juſt falling into, and was ſway'd by nothing but his prevailing Paſſion. His Imagination was ſo diſorder'd, that he thought he had his Fair One every now and then in his Arms, and he often talk'd to her as if he had been actually enjoying her. In ſhort, he paſs'd his Hours in Bed very pleaſantly, for tho' he rarely ſlept, he had ſuch ſort of Dreams as create more Pleaſure than a profound Sleep, and have this Advantage, that they tickle the Fancy, without impairing the Strength of the Body.

LA FORET heard nothing of his Miſtreſs in three Days, which made him ſo uneaſy that it had like to have turn'd his Brains. He often retraced his whole Conduct, but could find nothing to reproach himſelf with, unleſs that he had been too reſpectful. I had not obſerv'd till then, that the Women of that Country had any Inclination to Galantry. I really thought they were too ſilly for it; but I began to ſee by this Specimen that there are few of them in any Country but know a great deal of it in the Affair of granting Love to the Men, and that if they don't take greater Liberties than they do, it is only owing to the extreme Severity of the Laws againſt ſuch as tranſgreſs the Rules to which *Hymen* ſeems to bind them. And they ſay moreover, that the Kings and Governors are ſubject to the ſame Inconveniencies, as private Men in *Europe*, becauſe thoſe Gentlemen having more than one Wife, each of them ſtudies to gain her Husband's Favour, and when

when ſhe can't ſucceed, it gives her Occaſion to embrace the firſt Offer that preſents: But return we now to our Love-Story.

UPON the Fourth Day in the Forenoon, as the King came to ſee us at work, I thought at the firſt Sight of him that he ſmelt a Rat; for looking wiſtfully upon *La Foret*, he ſaid to him, You ſeem to be ruffled, Friend; your Countenance is chang'd from what it us'd to be, and if I may be allow'd to form a Judgment by your Eyes, your Heart is not in a very ſerene State. Are you fallen in love with any Fair One of this Canton? For Love in a few Hours commits great Ravages. You bluſh, continued the King. Don't be afraid to own it: Tho' you are a Foreigner, and of a Religion very different from mine, I aſſure you that I will do every thing for you that is in my Power. If you make your Addreſſes to any Free Perſon, I'll find the way to make her marry you; but let me adviſe you not to delude any Woman, becauſe, ſhould you be taken in the Fact, all my Credit would not be of weight enough to ſave you. Galantry may perhaps prevail among us, but if it does, 'tis conceal'd; and you are not ignorant that 'tis a Breach of one of the Articles of our Law, which the Judge treats with the greateſt Severity. Adultery eſpecially would not be pardon'd in my ſelf.

LA FORET, who had by this time recover'd himſelf, reply'd, 'Tis perfectly right, Sir, to be ſevere upon that Head, and eſpecially with reſpect to the great Men: If I had the Power in my own Hands, a King who practis'd that ſort of Galantry ſhould be leſs exempt from Puniſhment than other

other Men, becauſe while his Subjects are oblig'd, for the Generality, to adhere to one Perſon only, he has the Liberty of taking a Dozen, and by conſequence the Pleaſure of having all the Variety at home that he could expect to find abroad. However, continu'd he, this is a Happineſs which I don't envy your Majeſty; for tho' I have neither Wife nor Miſtreſs, I am very well contented; and if I don't look at preſent altogether ſo brisk as uſual, 'tis owing no doubt to my not having ſlept well for two or three Nights paſt, for otherwiſe I am in perfect Health. Nevertheleſs, he added, I am infinitely oblig'd to your Majeſty for your Deſire to make me happy, and to find me out a Settlement. If ever I'm inclin'd to marry, I ſwear to you, Sir, that I will refer my ſelf intirely to your Diſpoſal. Let us call another Cauſe, *La Foret*, ſaid I, 'tis time enough to think of altering your Condition. The King reply'd very graciouſly, That ſhall be when you pleaſe. You know the Privileges of the Gown which you wear, ſo that you will not have much to reproach me with.

THE King thereupon retiring, we went to Dinner, and made various Reflections upon the little Dialogue that had paſs'd betwixt us. Mean time *La Foret* did not fail to take a Walk after Dinner in the Galleries. *Lidola*, who generally took a Pleaſure in ſeeing him paſs by her Windows, fix'd her Eye upon him till he was out of Sight. Her Waiting-woman, who always kept a Look-out for ſome Intelligence that might be to their Advantage, came at laſt to her with News that ſhe had juſt met the King taking the Air

Air with the Empreſs; from whence the Queen concluded, that he would infallibly ſpend the Night with her, as had always been his conſtant Practice when he took her out in the Day-time; therefore without Heſitation ſhe injoin'd her Servant to go after *La Foret*, and to ſignify to him, as ſhe paſs'd by him, that ſhe expected him at Eleven of the Clock.

THE young Woman was not dilatory in the Execution of her Commiſſion. She met him juſt as he was upon the Return, bruſh'd as cloſe by him as ſhe could with Decency, and ſaid to him, *en paſſant*, Come to us an Hour before Midnight. I dare not expreſs his Joy at the hearing of theſe agreeable Words, for fear of ſaying too much to be believ'd, or not enough to give a juſt Idea of his Tranſports. He made ſuch Haſte back, and was ſo abſent from himſelf all the while, that he was at home before he perceiv'd it. I need not ſay he had no Thought, for he did not care that I ſhou'd ſpeak to him. The little Time he had to ſpare, was ſpent at the Toilet, where he conſulted his Mirrour a hundred times, which being only of poliſh'd Steel, made him fearful that he had not diſcover'd all his Blemiſhes. He waſh'd himſelf almoſt all over with perfum'd Water, cut and trim'd his Whiskers, comb'd his black Hair over and over again, and being at length as handſome as *Adonis*, he wiſh'd me Good-night, and went his way. *Lidola*'s Servant, who ſtood Centinel, receiv'd and carry'd him into the Anti-Chamber, where there was no Light, and bid him ſteal into her Miſtreſs's Apartment.

LIDOLA was lain down on a Bed so fragrant, that it perfum'd the whole House. Her Head-Dress was in the careless Air, her Neck bare, as was also her left Breast, her Arms at Liberty, and her whole Posture was like one between Sleeping and Waking. *La Foret* made his Approach to her so softly, that she did not perceive it. At the unexpected Sight of so many Beauties he stood like a Statue, with his Eyes so fix'd on the Person of this charming *Venus*, that they had no Motion. A secret Desire, on which he was incapable of making the least Reflection, push'd him forward to view her more nearly. She was like a Loadstone that attracted him imperceptibly and irresistibly. This adorable Beauty happening to open her Eyes, seem'd to the last Degree astonish'd to see her Lover by her Bed-side. She blush'd, and having rais'd her self up, and put on a Veil that lay in a Chair, just at hand, You have surpris'd me, said she, and perhaps seen things you ought not to have seen. Nay, Madam, he reply'd, the Fates will'd it, and not you, that I should have the Opportunity of contemplating Beauties that had like to have thrown me into a Trance. However, what I have seen will be so far from diminishing the Respect I owe you, that it has infinitely heighten'd a Passion which I thought could not have been stronger than it was before. You deserve tho' to be chastis'd, reply'd the Fair One, for not letting me know that you was present. But what made you come so soon? It cannot be Night yet, and I did not appoint you 'till Eleven o' Clock. You mistake, said *La Foret*, you only upbraid me for coming so late, tho'

tho' you don't conſider how long I have been here. You deceive your ſelf, ſaid the Queen; if you conſult your Watch, you'll find that you are in the Wrong to contradict me. I have no Watch, reply'd *La Foret*, nor have I need of one, for on theſe Occaſions my Head is a Minute-Watch, ſo that I would not loſe one Moment. Have you not a Watch? ſaid *Lidola*; 'tis ſurpriſing that you ſhould be without thoſe Jewels which you beſtow upon others? If I had the Skill to make ſuch pretty Machines, it ſhould never be ſaid that I had not one for my own Uſe, and another at the Service of my Miſtreſs. This was a mortifying Compliment to the *Frenchman*, who very well underſtood the Tendency of the Rebuke, and was mad with himſelf that he had not prevented it. The Queen perceiving him in ſome Confuſion, thought fit to put him out of his Pain. I only banter, *La Foret*, ſaid ſhe, and you are ſtudying for a ſerious Anſwer. Sit down upon my Bed, continu'd ſhe, the Moments are precious, let us not ſquander them to no purpoſe. At the ſame time ſhe went to graſp his Hand, but Love render'd her ſo weak, that ſhe gave a Sigh, and fell back on her Pillow. So far things went on ſwimmingly, and the two young Hearts did not doubt that their Bliſs was upon the Point of being compleated. But Fortune envying their Felicity, chang'd all their Hopes on a ſudden into mortal Terrors.

THE King had a real Love for *Lidola*; the Violence he had done himſelf in not ſeeing her ſo long was ſuch a Burden upon his Mind, that he could bear it no longer; and a freſh Report which ſhe

ſhe had given out of her Indiſpoſition, adding to his former Uneaſineſs, he was reſolv'd to keep her Company that Night. The Waiting-woman, who was always at the Window, hearing a confuſed Noiſe at a diſtance, like that of a Company of Men, immediately had a Miſtruſt, becauſe 'twas but juſt Midnight, and the King never went to Bed before that time: At length, ſeeing the Train approach, ſhe ran and gave the Alarm, crying out, *We are all undone, Madam, here is the King juſt at the Gate.* As warm as our two Lovers were before, their Blood immediately chill'd in their Veins. *La Foret* knew not what would be his Doom. It was no time to demur, and he was immediately hurry'd into a Cloſet which fronted that Chamber. He was no ſooner enter'd, but a Domeſtic who ſtepp'd before, knock'd at the Gate. The Chamber-maid made him ſtay juſt as long as ſhe thought it might have taken her up to riſe, and as Viſits of this ſort were pretty frequent, ſhe did not ſeem to be at all ſurpriz'd. As the King was cloſe at the Domeſtic's Heels, he enter'd the very Moment that the Gate was open'd. The Queen, who heard him coming, found it no very hard Task to counterfeit an Indiſpoſition, to which the Fear ſhe was in, both for her ſelf and her Spark, did not a little contribute; and the King verily believing that ſhe was not well, had not the leaſt Suſpicion, tho' he ſaw her more diſorder'd than uſual. He ſhew'd a greater Fondneſs for her than ever, and ſaid to her, that notwithſtanding the ill State of Health he found her in, he intended to ſpend the Night with her. Sire, reply'd *Lidola*, you do me a great deal of Honour,

Honour, but I am not now in a Condition either to give Pleasure, or to receive it; I fear that if I were to stir ever so little, it would do me an Injury, and I find that I want Rest. I would not incommode you, said the King, for the World; if you can't admit of my Company, I'll go and rest upon the Tent Bed in that Closet, being determin'd to stay here all Night. This Answer quite unexpected by the Fair One, so alarm'd her, that after abundance of Excuses for the Coldness wherewith she had treated him, which she ascrib'd entirely to her Illness, she began to be very sweet upon him, and begg'd him earnestly to undress himself.

AS soon as he was in Bed, and the Domestics gone, the Chamber-maid took an Opportunity to go into the Closet to consult with the Prisoner what shift to make for his Liberty, when, to her great Surprise, she could not find him, tho' there was no Door but what he went in at, and the Windows were so close, that they did not seem to have been open'd. While she was rummaging the Bed and other Furniture in that Apartment, the Lady, who was perplex'd to think what was become of her Lover, call'd to her to raise her Pillow, and bring her some Drink, and having by that means an Opportunity to whisper, and to hear that he was gone, tho' she knew not which way, it put her out of Pain, and she slept the remainder of the Night very quietly. *La Forest* imagining that the King would make a very short Stay, had shut himself up in the Privy, but he found himself terribly mistaken when he heard soon after that he design'd to pass the whole Night with

with his Wife, or at leaſt in the Cloſet where he was, in caſe that ſhe could not admit him to her Bed. Then it was, as he has own'd to me ſince, more than once, that he was ſeiz'd with a Panick which he had never felt the like of before. He could not return thro' the Chamber where the King was, without the Hazard of being ſeen; he thought all the Windows of the Apartment were ſecur'd with Iron Bars: Beſides, he was afraid the Noiſe would betray him, if he open'd them, eſpecially if he leap'd into the Canal, which the Cloſet overlook'd. Having revolv'd all this in his Mind, in the utmoſt Hurry, he thought of no better Expedient, than to ſlip into the Water thro' the Hole of the Privy, and ſo to ſave himſelf by Swimming.

BY good Luck for him, the Room where I lay was low, and next the Road, ſo that he came and rapp'd with his Fingers at one of my Windows. I preſently imagin'd that his Affairs had taken a wrong Turn, got up in a Trice, and had no ſooner open'd the Window, but he bolted in like a hunted Hare, pull'd off his Clothes, and went into Bed, where he gave me a full and true Account of his nocturnal Adventures. You ſee now, ſaid I, dear Boy, how Love and Fortune trifle with you. They ſeldom agree, and if ever, 'tis in order to deceive us the more terribly in the After-Game. Believe me, you are in a very dangerous way, and if you don't abandon it, as I have already advis'd you, it will aſſuredly prove your Ruine. Let me hear no more of it, ſaid he, ſhe is worth all my Trouble; and provided I can but once enjoy her, I fear not to die. What vexes

me moſt of all is, that I know not how to gratify her. She ask'd me for a Watch; whereas I have not one to give her, and it will take me up at leaſt a Week to finiſh that we have in hand. If ſhe wants you to give her a Watch, ſaid I, 'tis a plain Sign that her Love is ſelf-intereſted, and tho' it were not ſo, how do you propoſe ſhe ſhould make uſe of it? The King who will know it preſently, will alſo be ſatisfy'd where ſhe had it, upon which the Myſtery will break out, and then farewel the two Lovers. You are in the right, upon my Word, ſaid my Friend, I had not that Foreſight; but in ſhort, we muſt make an end of it, and by that time, I warrant we ſhall find ſome Expedient or other to bring us off; for Love is too ingenious to lurch us when we are in ſo fair a way.

MEAN time we heard five or ſix great Strokes upon the Baſon of our Clock which were given ſo faſt one after another, that they made us ſtart; we could not imagine the Meaning of it; not conſidering that we our ſelves had advis'd the King to make uſe of this Method, in Imitation of the *Europeans*, to raiſe an Alarm, and give the Inhabitants of the Canton Notice, when any thing happen'd to the Diſadvantage of the Quarter, that they might all flock together to the Place, and endeavour to remedy it. A Man running by juſt after, and calling out Fire, as loud as ever he could, deliver'd us from that Fright, and threw us into another. Not knowing where it was, we leap'd to the Bed's-feet and put on each a dirty Gown, which we girt cloſe round our Bodies, with a Deſign to lend a Helping-hand to quench it, and

going

going out, we presently saw that Queen *Lidola*'s House was in Flames. Ladders were brought from all Parts, and there was such Plenty of Water at hand, that by the Force of it the Fire was hinder'd from spreading to the neighbouring Apartments, so that the Damage was not very considerable. As it began in the Closet where *La Foret* was conceal'd, we did not doubt but the Waiting-woman, when she was looking for him, let some Spark fall into the Tent-Bed, or some other Moveable of combustible Matter, which had been the Cause of the Fire. Mean time the King retir'd as soon as a Domestic brought him the News. We went immediately to condole with him, but he only laugh'd, and told us, that neither the Fright nor the Damage deserv'd our Compliment, especially with regard to a Man of his natural Temper, whom nothing could put out of Humour. The Queen was no sooner recover'd of her Fright, on account of this sad Fire, but she took Pen in Hand and drew up a second Letter, in Substance almost as follows.

To *La Foret.*

MY Chamber-maid has already been abroad. I know where you are retired, but I give a shrewd guess which way you made your Escape. The Conjuncture was dangerous, and altogether as alarming to me as to you, insomuch that the Fire which afterwards broke out in my Closet, by the Imprudence of my People, was nothing to it, in comparison. But let not this discourage you, we shall be more happy another time. Be constant and tranquil. I will give you notice when 'tis a proper Season,

Seaſon, and take ſuch Precautions that at our next Interview, I hope for an Opportunity of giving you a convincing Teſtimony, that I am truly your Friend,

LIDOLA.

IT was no difficult Matter for the Meſſenger of Love to ſlide this Billet into the Hands of the Lover, who ſeldom fail'd of walking by her Miſtreſs's Door every Morning, Noon, and Night, ſo that ſhe might meet and talk with him whenever ſhe pleas'd, without any Notice taken of her. Mean time, *La Foret* ſeriouſly went to work upon her Watch, and labour'd ſo hard at it, that it was ready by the fifth Day. It was extremely pretty; the Graving of the Box was beautiful, nor was the Caſe inferior to the Workmanſhip within. The Evening was hardly ſhut in, but he went out with his Machine in his Pocket, and finding the young Woman of whom he was in queſt, he put it into her Hand, and deſir'd her to preſent it for him to the Queen, to whoſe Favour he always recommended himſelf. If ever Woman diſcover'd her Joy, *Lidola* did at the Sight of this pretty Watch. We were told that ſhe kiſs'd it a thouſand times, and bleſs'd herſelf for having ſucceeded ſo well in her Intrigue.

ONE would have thought that this fine Pledge of *La Foret*'s Love would have haſten'd the Happineſs he expected for his Reward, but in truth, he heard no more of it. The Waiting-maid who formerly was ſo eager to find him out, was as watchful afterwards to avoid him. This made him very uneaſy; but as he had no room to ſuſ-

pect

pect the Lady, he imagin'd that the young Woman was diſguſted to find her Miſtreſs ſo highly gratify'd, and herſelf unrewarded in compariſon of the Pains ſhe had taken. In ſhort, not long after, when he ſcarce thought any thing of it, the young Woman to his great Surprize accoſted him at a Place where there was no Witneſs, and after having dropp'd a Sigh, you are wretchedly deceiv'd, *ſaid ſhe*, I really pity you, and have the utmoſt Abhorrence of my Miſtreſs's unjuſt Proceeding. All that ſhe has done hitherto was only to coax you out of a Watch, and now ſhe has it, ſhe has order'd me to tell you, that ſhe finds it too difficult and dangerous for her to receive you at her Apartments any more, that ſhe is troubled for it to the laſt Degree, that her Grief is even inexpreſſible, that it will certainly break her Heart, and a great deal more of ſuch Cant which is all meer Hypocriſy.

THE King, *continued ſhe*, was with us Yeſterday, and hearing the Beat of the Watch, immediately ask'd what it was. Being under a Neceſſity of telling him, he ſeem'd ſurpriz'd at it, and would needs know how Madam came by that Jewel. The ungrateful Creature, as ſhe herſelf confeſs'd to me, was juſt going to tell him, that you had ſent it to her with a Deſign to make uſe of it as a Bribe to debauch her, and that you had actually made an Attempt to that end; but for fear of involving herſelf in a Scrape, wherein perhaps ſhe would have run as great a Riſque as you, or at leaſt have been in Danger of reſtoring the Watch, ſhe told him that I had found it, and that ſhe had it from me. Upon this, I was call'd,

and queſtion'd as to the Truth of it. I perceiv'd by her tipping the Wink on me at every Word, that ſhe was in a Plunge, and that there was a Neceſſity for my confirming every thing ſhe had ſaid. Very well, if it be ſo, *ſaid the King*, I know whoſe it is, and Juſtice demands the Reſtitution of it to the Right Owner. I would have done ſo before, *ſaid the Queen*, for as ſoon as my Maid found it, I imagin'd it belong'd to thoſe Foreigners who made yours, and I ſent it back to them that Inſtant, but when my Servant told from whom ſhe came, they proteſted that they would never take it again, and that their Deſign was to make one for the Empreſs, and for all the other Queens. Thus, *ſaid the Chambermaid*, have I told you what Turn the Matter has taken. Poſſibly you expect ſome Reward for your Preſent, but I don't think you will have any as long as you live. 'Tis enough, *ſaid La Foret*, I thank you my Dear; undoubtedly I ſhall remember your Hint, and will take my Meaſures accordingly.

IT being then paſt Supper-time, *La Foret* made haſte to his Chamber, and went to Bed without ſaying a Word. You are in the Dumps, Friend, *ſaid I*, what ails you? Don't Affairs go to your Mind? No verily, they don't, *ſaid he*, for I heard that juſt now, which I ſhould never have thought of; and thereupon he gave me the Relation of every Thing that the Maid had told him. Alas! *ſaid I*, did not I tell you as much before? However, you are come off better than I thought you would. But after all, conſider the Conſequences of this Affair. You are hereby brought under

under a Neceſſity of making Watches with all Speed for all the King's Wives on Pain of incurring their Diſpleaſure, and perhaps too the Monarch's Hatred, who if you ſhould fail in that Point, might well miſtruſt that you gave that Watch with a Deſign to inſinuate yourſelf into the Affections of the moſt beautiful of all his Wives, which Suſpicion you know would be corroborated upon the leaſt Noiſe of your having been ſeen Abroad at an unſeaſonable Hour, either in the Water, or going in at our Window, if any Body has ever ſo little Hint of it. The D---l take all Women then, *ſaid he in a Paſſion*, I'll never truſt another be ſhe of what Quality ſhe will. Fair and ſoftly, *ſaid I*, your being in a Rage won't help the Matter. I plainly ſee what is to be done. That we may have at leaſt ſome Reſpite, we muſt deſire the King to let us go and ſpend the Summer at our former Village, and then we will conſider what we have to do.

NEXT Day the King came as uſual to ſee what we were about, and banter'd us on the Affair of the Watch. *La Foret* confirm'd every Tittle that the Chambermaid had ſaid about it, and then added, that it being hot Weather, and not ſo proper for working as the Winter Seaſon, he deſir'd that his Majeſty would conſent that we might go and ſpend ſome Months in our old Village. With all my Heart, *ſaid the King*, and after having order'd us a hundred Pieces, he wiſh'd us a happy Journey. We went ſoon after to take our Leaves of the Court, and the Cook in particular being our very good Friend, we thought it our Duty to crack a Bottle with him. The Moment

that we told him of our Reſolution, the Man ſeem'd Thunder ſtruck, which we both miſtook for the Effect of his Friendſhip and his Concern to part with us for ſo long a Time, but when he recover'd his Speech, he ſaid to our very great Surprize, are you really going away, Gentlemen, do you conſider well what you are doing? Don't you know what People ſay of you? God forbid that I ſhould ſuſpect you of the leaſt foul Action. You never gave me any Occaſion for it, nor any one elſe that I know of; but every Body does not know you ſo well as I do. If you will be rul'd by me, you ought to juſtify yourſelves before you change your Quarters, otherwiſe you'll run the Riſque of being accus'd as Incendiaries; for they who have ſpread the Report will triumph in your Abſence; and who knows but ſuch as doubt of it at this preſent will then give Credit to it? How! Incendiaries! *ſaid I*, are we charg'd with a Deſign of laying the Place in Aſhes before we go away? No, *reply'd he*, but they give out, that *La Foret* is the Man who ſet Fire to Queen *Lidda*'s Houſe. We are very much oblig'd to you, *ſaid I*, for your good Caution, and we'll go this Moment and inquire into the Cauſe of ſo groundleſs a Scandal, of which I don't think it will be very difficult to clear ourſelves. As ſoon as we were gone out, I'll lay a Wager, *ſaid I to my Comrade*, that you were ſeen returning to your Lodging at a late Hour the very Night the Fire happen'd, and that ſome ill-deſigning Perſon has drawn this Concluſion from it to your Diſadvantage. Let us go to the King, *ſaid I*, and open the Matter to him, when we ſhall preſently ſee what he will ſay of it.

AS

AS soon as the Monarch saw us, What's the Matter, *said he*, my dear Friends? have you not receiv'd the Money I order'd for you, or do you want any more? What is it you stand in need of, I conjure you to tell me freely. We want nothing, Sir, *said I*, but the Continuance of your Favour; for we have just heard something which very much afflicts us, and we must lie inconsolably at your Feet 'till your Majesty has procur'd us Satisfaction. We are slander'd with having form'd a Design to reduce this Royal Canton to Ashes. If we are guilty, we deserve to be punish'd, if not, the Calumny is so heinous, that we hope from your Clemency, the Inventor of it will have exemplary Chastisement. Tush, *said the King*, I heard this several Days ago, but I gave so little Heed to it that I did not think it worth while to mention it to you. However, to satisfy you, I'll go straight and order Informations to be taken about it with all Speed. And indeed they who had the Commission, discharg'd it with such Diligence, that by tracing the Matter from one to another, the Person that first invented the Lye was found out in an Hour's time, who prov'd to be one of the King's Equerries, an honest sober Man of exemplary Modesty.

THE King at our Sollicitation was pleas'd to send for him in our Presence, and having ask'd him what Motive he had to give out a Rumor so prejudicial to our Reputation, he made this Defence. I had been a little indispos'd for some Days, *said he*, when the Court Physician whom I consulted, prescrib'd a Purge to me which operated 36 Hours after I had taken it. Being obliged

during this to riſe in the Night, I heard a great Noiſe in the Canal facing my Chamber, at the Entrance of the neighbouring Canton. My Curioſity to know what it was, made me look out at the Window, and it being not very dark, I ſaw a Man in the Canal who got Aſhore over-againſt the Queen's Pavilion, ſhook his Clothes, and ran towards the Temple-Bridge. Upon this I open'd my Door ſoftly, ran after him as hard as I could, and having watch'd him towards the Senate-Houſe, I ſaw him rap at a Window, and on its being open'd, he got thro' it into the Houſe. I knew it was the Apartment of theſe Gentlemen by their Stature, and a certain Air which I know is peculiar to them. A little after this, *Lidola*'s Apartment was in a Flame. Now, Sir, *ſaid he*, I ask whether putting all theſe Circumſtances together, my Conjectures were ſo ill founded, and if wiſer Men than I might not have been as much miſtaken? I own, *ſaid the King*, there was a Probability, but ſomething more was requiſite in order to ground an Accuſation. But before I determine any thing on the Point, what ſay you to all this? *ſaid the King to* La Foret. Nothing, Sir, *reply'd my Comrade*, every Tittle that the Gentleman has told you, is true, only the Inference he draws from it is falſe, ſo that I have nothing to reproach him with but Want of Charity. My Companion, *continued he*, is an Aſtronomer, of which, Sir, you are not ignorant: He has been teaching me for ſome time paſt to find out the principal Stars, and my Deſire to perfect myſelf in that Science, makes me often riſe in the Night to ſee if the Sky is clear, and then I am us'd to take a Tour in one

of

of the four Cantons, becauſe the Buildings being lower there than in this, I have a better View of the Stars. That very Night I went Abroad for the very ſame Purpoſe, and having caſt my Eyes on *Sirius* and *Procion*, and obſerving their Situation and Diſtance as I walk'd along, I had the Misfortune to fall into the Canal before I was aware of it. Being ſtun'd as it were with ſuch an unexpected Fall, I made a little Pauſe to look about me, and fell a ſwimming without knowing where I ſhould land, 'till at laſt I got Aſhore where this honeſt Gentleman ſaw me, and from whence I made all the Haſte I could directly to my Chamber into which I enter'd thro' the Window, not only for fear of awaking our People, but of being ſeen in a Pickle which would no doubt have rais'd their Laughter. You ſee, Sir, that we agree perfectly in our Depoſitions, but that Mr. *Equerry* is quite miſtaken in the Cauſe of my being ſous'd in the Water; I hope however that after this, he will be fully convinc'd of my Innocence. I am ſorry that this Misfortune occaſion'd ſuch an ill Opinion of me. My own Deſtiny is properly ſpeaking, the Cauſe of it; therefore I owe you no Grudge for it. I am oblig'd to you, *reply'd the* Equerry, and beg Pardon for the Injury I have done you, for which I am really ſorry. I ſee plainly that I was too raſh upon this Occaſion; but it will teach me to be more cautious another time. Are you both ſatisfy'd, *ſaid the King*? Yes, Sir, *reply'd they*. Very well, *ſaid the King again*, ſhake Hands, and let it be never mention'd more. Thereupon we again took our Leaves, and retir'd as well pleas'd as a Couple of Kings. *La*

Foret with his Preſence of Mind, and I with the Civilities of our Prince, and becauſe we had ſo happily eſcap'd a Scouring.

WE ſet out next Day without taking any thing but our Gowns, and ſome Trifles which we thought abſolutely neceſſary. We did not want Money, we were known, and the People of the Country are very hoſpitable, ſo that we were in no danger of faring ill. The King having recollected that he did not ask us what Conveniency we intended to make uſe of for our travelling, ſent a Domeſtic after us to conjure us to take the beſt that he had, and to tell us, that if we did not, he ſhould reſent it. We had travell'd about half a League when the Meſſenger overtook us; he would fain have had us gone back with him, or to have told him how we intended to be carry'd, whether in a Chariot or a Gondola which he would accommodate us with on the Spot, adding, it was the King's Pleaſure. We thank'd the Meſſenger for his Civility, and pray'd him to tell his Majeſty, that we were confounded to find him ſo very obliging, that we ſhould gladly embrace his kind Offer, but that we choſe to walk from one Village to another after we had ſtaid long enough to make an Acquaintance with the Judge or the Prieſt. This Anſwer did not ſatisfy our Man who left us with ſome Uneaſineſs, for fear perhaps that the King ſhould think he had not duly diſcharg'd his Commiſſion.

BY the way now, let any one judge from this little Incident, whether we had any Reaſon to complain of our Fortune, and whether we were not compleatly happy, ſetting aſide that unlucky

Affair

Affair of my Comrade. It was not only at Court that particular Reſpect was paid us, but every where upon the Road the People throng'd to do us Honour, ſo that one would have ſwore an expreſs Order had come from Court to receive us like the chief Men of the Kingdom.

WE had been gone about 17 Days when we were ſurpriz'd to meet two Domeſtics of our Judge and our Prieſt with a Canoe laden with Spades, Mattocks, Pick-axes, Hatchets, Bows, Habits, and neceſſary Proviſions to make a trading Voyage for Copper. They told us, that their Maſters wiſh'd we would be ſo good as to make them another Clock bigger than the former with a Bell in Proportion, which they intended to preſent to their Governor, in order to gain his Conſent that each of their Sons might have one of his Daughters, who as they deſcrib'd them, were perfect Beauties. And as a pretty deal of Copper would be wanting for the Purpoſe, they ſaid their Maſters were ſending them to the Mines with Goods to truck for that Metal; and indeed they had a very good Stock of Proviſions on Board, and a Permiſſion to ſtay out as long as they thought fit. My Comrade preſently gave me to underſtand, that this News chagrin'd him not a little. What, *ſaid he*, I came from a Place to avoid continual Labour, and they are cutting out Work for me in another Place where I am come for Reſt; but I'll ſee the whole Nation at the Devil before I'll file a Stroke more for any of them, tho' I ſhould not be againſt it if there was any thing to be got by it worth our carrying Home whenever a Conveniency offers, but all our Re-

ward is only a Piece of Metal which will yield but 15 *d.* a Pound in *Europe*. Let us be gone, *continued he*, as ſoon as poſſible, for I had rather hazard 100 Lives if I had them to go back the Way we came, into our own Country, than ſtay here any longer.

YOU don't conſider, *La Foret*, *ſaid I*, nor have you well examin'd the Obſtacles that we ſhall have to ſurmount. We had great Advantages when we came, which we have not now. We were then three in Number all provided with Fire-Arms, and preſs'd by Neceſſity; but now the Caſe is quite otherwiſe. Be rul'd by me, my Friend, let us ſtay where we are, we ſhall be ſtill more and more belov'd by amuſing ourſelves in Clock-making, part of our Time, and one cannot be always idle. Wherever we are we can have but Food and Raiment, and here we have as much again as we want. Let us not imitate our Countrymen who are ſo fickle that they are always ſhifting from one Place to another. Before we have travell'd much farther we ſhall repent of our Folly. Finally, I expatiated upon the Difficulties which hinder'd our Return, but it was all in vain, and he told me in plain Terms, that he would go alone if I was obſtinately bent not to go with him. Very well then, *ſaid I*, ſince you are inexorable, and as on the other hand, I am reſolv'd not to part with you; 'tis neceſſary we ſhould take the Opportunity of this Boat, and try to eſcape with it thro' that frightful Cavern as they ſtill call the Place where, as I ſaid before, their firſt King pretended that the Earth brought him forth.

WHILE

WHILE we were forming this Design, our two Peasants were impatient to see the End of our Dialogue. I told them that we had been divided in our Opinions what Course it were best for us to take, whether to return to the Village, or to go along with them to the Copper-Mines where we had never been yet, and that we had determin'd to keep them Company. They expres's'd great Joy at it, and in order to add to it, we resolv'd to go to the next Canton, and buy some Flagons of the best Liquors they had. We also took some more Provision with us, but persuaded them at the same time to turn towards the River, on pretence that as we had seen it but in one Place, we had a Curiosity to survey the Shores of it from one End to the other, and we assur'd them also, that we would assist them alternately to row, and would furnish them with all Necessaries if our Voyage was retarded some Days by the Current of the Water, which however was not very rapid in that Place. The poor Fellows consented to every thing we propos'd, the only Difficulty being that as they were both of them Natives of a Canton not many Miles of, they made Account to go thither and see their Relations. I presently gave them to understand that far from hindering their Design we would forward it. Go, *said I to them*, this instant, and spend two or three Days with your Friends while we march so slowly on that when you turn towards the Current, you will soon overtake us. They were in Raptures at my Complaisance, and I was as much rejoyc'd that I was not forc'd to the Trouble of contriving to get rid of 'em in any other Manner.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

The Author leaves this fine Country; the Ways he contriv'd to get out of it. He meets again on the Sea-Side with some of the Ship's Company with whom he had formerly been cast away upon the Coast, &c.

AS soon as those honest Fellows had left us, we took our Course towards the River, but still kept in those Divisions of the Cantons where there were no Houses. I think we had saunter'd scarce two Days, when a little before Midnight we found ourselves at the End of the Canals where were Sluices which we knew nothing at all of before we came to them. This curs'd Passage alarm'd us, and we tugg'd hard near an Hour before we discover'd which way the Sluice-Doors were to be open'd. At length we master'd the Difficulty, but then we were as weary as Dogs. In the mean time, there was a Necessity for our going over. It would have been a dangerous Enterprize in the Day-time, because no Body was suffer'd to enter this River without Leave from the Judges, not only by Reason of the Fishery, but in Respect to the Laws which hinder the Inhabitants from going beyond the Bounds of their Country; whereas in the Night-time there was seemingly no Danger of being so much as seen by any Person whatsoever. We had not above 4 Miles and a half to pass. *La Foret*, as he was more zealous to push on than I, so he was more tir'd.

tir'd. I bid him take a little Reſt, becauſe one of us at a time was enough to ſteer the Boat.

I KEPT exactly in the middle of the Current, and it being fine ſtill Weather, our Boat drove down with the Stream imperceptibly. This together with the Fatigues we had undergone made me ſo drouſy that I could not keep my Eyes open, and we ſlept ſo ſoundly that whether we were always ſo fortunate as to keep off of the Shore, or whether we did not ſometimes daſh againſt it, is more than I can tell, for we were not eaſily to be awak'd. Nor did I exactly know how long we ſlept; probably it would have laſted long enough to have refreſh'd us, but as Misfortune would have it, it was interrupted on a ſudden. Our paltry little Boat daſh'd ſo vehemently againſt a Rock, that it puſh'd me out of my Place, and I fell with ſuch Violence againſt a Shoal, that my Face look'd as if it had been ſcarify'd. My Comrade ſtarted out of his Sleep not knowing what the Noiſe meant, nor where he was, for he had quite forgot he was upon the Water, and cry'd all at once, Oh God! what's the matter? where am I? Tho' I had done myſelf a great deal of Miſchief, I could not help laughing heartily. Are you there, *ſaid he*, pray where are we? Hell itſelf can't be darker than it is here. Don't ask me, *ſaid I*, for I can't reſolve you, only this I am certain of that our Boat has juſt now beat againſt ſome Place, which gave me ſuch a Fall that my Head is broke, and if I gueſs right, we muſt be got into that Cave which we are to paſs thro'. I was ſo very ſleepy, *ſaid he*, that I did not conſider we were in a Bark. Good God, how dark it

is

is here! I think you were not miſtaken when you gueſs'd that we were under Ground. Handle an Oar, *ſaid I*, and try if you can feel what we are faſten'd to; we muſt certainly ſtick to ſomething, for I don't perceive that we ſtir, and yet my Hand tells me the Stream runs down apace, ſo that the Paſſage here muſt be very narrow.

LA FORET was a bold Man, yet he was daunted at this dreadful Gulph; he was afraid to ſtir, and would willingly have ſtay'd where we were. When I ſaw there was no Good to be done with him, I grop'd with my Hands and my Oar, and found that we were inclos'd between two Points of the Rock. Come on, ſaid I, there's no Harm, we are where I told you, I feel the Roof of the Cave with my Oar. Thereupon he beſtirr'd himſelf, but notwithſtanding all that we could do, I believe we were three Hours in getting out of that damn'd Place, after which we turn'd to the Right.

WHEREVER we came we met with Shoals, which no doubt were form'd by Parts of the Mountain that broke off every now and then, and obſtructed the Paſſage. We run a-ground, or elſe beat againſt the Shore, at every Turn, ſo that it had been well for us if the Boat had not been ſo ſwift, but we could not ſtop her. In the mean time the Paſſage grew ſtill narrower the farther we went, ſo that at laſt we could not go at all. Then my Blood came into my Face, and verily believing that we were abſolutely loſt, I was going to knock *La Foret* in the Head, to be reveng'd for the Miſchief he had been the Cauſe of to me, without any Neceſſity. But I remember'd

very luckily that I had formerly plung'd him in the like Scrapes, and that these were only the Consequences of our former Misfortunes.

NOW, said I, my Friend, we are hamper'd, and I know not how we shall get off. If we had but steer'd to the Left, no doubt we should have had room, but I don't see how we can go back, 'tis a pretty way, and besides the Current here is too rapid. Upon this he sounded the Water, and finding it but three or four Foot deep, he stripp'd without saying a Word, and leap'd all at once into the Water. O Heavens! I cry'd, what are you doing? I thought I heard you fall overboard. Don't be afraid, said he, 'twas a voluntary Fall, I am going to examine the Depth and Breadth of this Pass. He had not been gone 20 Steps, but he guess'd he was at the very Point where the two Branches unite. He came to tell me the agreeable News, and added, that undoubtedly we were in the narrowest Part. Observing that there were but two Peaks where the Rock hinder'd our Passage, I took the Pickax and Mallet, and in less than two Hours demolish'd one of those Peaks. This Exercise, with what we had gone through before, made me extremely faint; we took some Nourishment in order to strengthen us, and we rested till we were in a Condition to begin our Work again. *La Foret* too try'd to demolish the other Peak that hinder'd our Passage, but whether the Stone there was harder, or that he did not act with that Strength as I did, he observ'd that he made but a very small Progress, so that I was fain to give him a Lift, and we work'd at it alternately.

WE

WE had labour'd a long time, and had not a great deal to do, when we heard a confuſed Noiſe approaching to us like Men talking; we ſtood ſtill for a few Minutes to hearken to it, and perceiv'd that ſome Men were coming to us. Verily, ſaid I to *La Foret*, our Flight has not been ſo ſecret, but it has been obſerv'd; perhaps the Day was far advanc'd before we enter'd this River, or it may be ſome body ſpy'd us in the Canals: Be it as it will, 'tis very probable that the Court was acquainted of it at Noon, and the King order'd Men to be ſent out to apprehend us. You hear how they advance, continued I, they are juſt at our Heels; what ſhall we do now? Upon my Word, ſaid *La Foret*, as for my part, I am of opinion that we ſhould fight to the laſt Gaſp. We have Tools here which will be of great Uſe to us for that Purpoſe; and on the other hand, if we ſuffer our ſelves to be taken, I apprehend that ſome unlucky Prank will be play'd us, and that we ſhall be ſent to the Mines. Not at all, ſaid I, there is no Danger; the King is too *debonnaire* to treat us after that manner; he has ſuch a Value for our Workmanſhip, that he would not deprive himſelf of it by baniſhing us; beſides, we can ſay with great Probability, that as we went upon the River with Deſign to examine the Diverſity of its Shores, it happen'd unluckily in the Night-time that our Boat got looſe before we perceiv'd it, ſo that we were drove down by the Current to the Place where they have found us. They will laugh perhaps at this little Diſaſter, but they'll be glad that they came ſo ſeaſonably to our Aſſiſtance.

AS

AS my Comrade was going to make anſwer, we ſpy'd a Light. They could not be above 30 Paces from us, and they were in the ſame Arm of the River that we were, but in that Part of it which form'd an Elbow, ſo that tho' they had Candles, they did not ſee us. They were no ſooner come thither, but their Boat, which probably was larger than ours, was hamper'd all of a ſudden, and they ſeem'd to be uneaſy at it. What ſhall we do now? ſaid one of them. Why, ſaid another, we will make the beſt Shift we can to get out of this Place, and we'll try to paſs to the Left, which we ſhould have done before, if you would but have been rul'd by me. We will do as you would have us, reply'd the former, but for my own part, I believe we may as well do nothing at all; 'tis poſſible that the Men we are in purſuit of have been gone this way twelve or fifteen Hours ago, ſo that by this time they are a great way off, or elſe have been caſt away ſomewhere, as we had like to have been ſeveral times. If you will take my Opinion, we will return and ſay, which is true, that we met with ſuch Obſtructions that we could go no farther. The King, indeed, would be very glad to have thoſe Men again, but he does not propoſe to hurt a Hair of their Heads; and you know that we were injoin'd to intreat them civilly to return, or to let them go in Peace in caſe they would not come back with us. We may ſay likewiſe, if you pleaſe, that we overtook them, but that notwithſtanding all we could ſay, it was not in our Power to perſuade them to return, becauſe they have not true Enjoyment in a Country, whoſe Maxims

Maxims are ſo different from theirs, and that they have a mind to ſee if they can't find a way to their own Country, where they may have the free Exerciſe of their Worſhip, whereas here they dare not ſo much as defend it, as they have declar'd upon more Occaſions than one. Upon this, they all ſaid, Come away, we will agree upon what to ſay as we are going back.

AFTER they were gone out of our Hearing, we did not budge for ſome time, becauſe we were afraid they might alter their Minds, and that when they heard the Strokes of our Mallet, they might be tempted to come back again. This Inactivity caſt us naturally into a Doze, and at length into a profound Slumber. When we awak'd, we began to put our ſelves into the greater Hurry, becauſe we were far from being hot, and were as freſh and brisk as if we had reſted in a good Bed. Conſequently we beat down the Angles that ſtopp'd us, and by main Strength forc'd open a Paſſage. Afterwards we found things as my Comrade thought we ſhould, for immediately we had Room enough, but then the Place was ſo full of ſtrong Echoes, that what would have charm'd us at another time, frighten'd us now from ſpeaking, becauſe at every Sentence you would have thought there had been a thouſand Devils in the Air mocking you with their monſtrous Voices.

THEN we advanc'd very ſlowly, and in the mean time began to hear another confuſed Noiſe, not unlike the Rumbling of Thunder at a ſmall diſtance, which made us even more afraid than we were before. A Man that thinks himſelf in Danger need have no other Affliction. Each of us

rack'd

rack'd his Brains to find out the Meaning of it. We were not very wide of the Mark when we imagin'd there muſt needs be a Place with a great Fall, and that the Noiſe we heard muſt proceed from ſome Cataract. There we thought our Ruine would be unavoidable. I did not dream then of what was told us of the *Portugueſe* who formerly went that way, for if I had conſider'd of it, I ſhould not have been in ſo much Pain. As we had Cordage enough, I thought it high time to make uſe of it; we immediately took ten or twelve Spades and Mattocks, ty'd them up in a Bundle as tight as we could, and caſt them into the Water as an Anchor. The Remedy was effectual, the Ground being uneven, our Machine ſtuck in a good Place, ſo that we advanc'd no further than the Rope would let us out. At the end of about twenty-five Fathom, my Comrade, who was commonly at the Head of the Boat to ſound with his Oar, and to feel on both Sides what hinder'd our Paſſage, call'd out to me on a ſudden to ſtand faſt, becauſe there fell ſome Water from the Top with which he was already wet to his Skin. Upon this I call'd him in, and after we had agreed that the Water we heard, and which no doubt was the ſame he then felt, could come from no other Place but the Top of the Mountain, from whence it precipitated by ſome Crevice into our River, we reſolv'd to hale in our Anchor, but before we had got it half way up, our Cable broke, a Loſs which however was not very conſiderable at that Juncture. I only endeavour'd to put my ſelf in ſuch a Situation as to avoid the impetuous Fall of the Torrent we ſo much dread-

ed.

ed. *La Foret*, by meer Force of Rowing, turn'd my Rudder ſo as to carry us againſt the Rock, ſo that we had the happieſt Paſſage that could be, without being in the leaſt wet, but not without danger of being ſwallow'd up by the dreadful toſſing and tumbling of the Waves, occaſion'd by the Fall of ſo great a Quantity of Water from ſuch an Eminence, and 'tis probable that if we had gone on the other Side, we ſhould have been ſwallow'd up.

THE reſt of the Way that we had to go was not near ſo dangerous, and it pleas'd God we ſaw the End of it. When our Eyes began to ſee the Light again, we thank'd the Lord moſt heartily, and our Joy was ſuch, that we have no Words in our Language ſtrong enough to expreſs it. However, we could not land immediately, the Shores being too ſteep, ſo that we were oblig'd to fall down at leaſt 3 Miles below the Mouth of the River, and then we went Aſhore on the left Side in a Place of ſuch Verdure as Nature ſeem'd to have made on purpoſe to ſolace us after having eſcap'd ſuch manifeſt Dangers.

THE Proviſions we had, came very ſeaſonably to our Relief, ſo that we made a very hearty Meal, and did not ſpare our Cider. By the Height of the Sun it could not be then leſs than two o' Clock in the Afternoon, therefore 'twas pretty plain we muſt have been about 30 Hours in that dark Place. From hence we made the beſt of our Way.

THIS River has prodigious Turnings and Windings, and is full of Rocks 'twixt Wind and Water, Shoals and Iſlands which in ſome Places form

form ten or a dozen difficult narrow Paſſages. There are ſome Falls in it too which are extremely dangerous, nevertheleſs, as we paſs'd them without any Damage or any extraordinary Accident that might naturally be expected in a Voyage of this Nature, I will not ſtand to mention the Particulars, for fear the Reader ſhould think me tedious.

I WILL only add that about 35 Leagues from the Sea, this River is divided into two Branches of which we choſe the leaſt, becauſe we had a mind to keep to the Left, and we thought the other led us too far out of our Way. It was juſt at this Diviſion that a ſwinging Salmon leap'd 7 or 8 Foot above Water, and fell into our Boat where we receiv'd it with great Joy in Hopes of making a Feaſt of it, which we did for ſeveral Days. Notwithſtanding all the Speed we made, we were a Month in our Voyage.

OUR Joy to think we were drawing towards our own dear Country, tho' after all we were not ſure that we ſhould ever ſee it again, made us indefatigable; we ſcarce gave ourſelves time to reſt, inſomuch that we could not have been more in a Hurry if a Ship had actually ſtaid to take us on Board for *Europe*. But alas! when we arriv'd at the Mouth of the River, our Hopes were all daſh'd in an inſtant. We ſaw a dreadful Paſſage before our Eyes, which ſeem'd to us impracticable. When we are Aſhore there's room for contriving Ways and Means to overcome ſuch Obſtacles as fall in the Way, and let what will happen almoſt, a little Patience and Pains-taking will bring

bring us out of it, but the mercileſs Ocean gives one a Diſguſt againſt venturing from the Shore.

WE had been five Years ſeeking our Fortune ſince we left theſe Coaſts. We had indeed encounter'd various Dangers, and undergone extraordinary Fatigues, but then on the other hand we had our Share of Diverſion, and even now, I would not for any thing but have ſeen ſo fine a Kingdom; on the contrary, I repent a thouſand times that I left it. My Comrade, who was the Cauſe of it, knew not what to ſay now; the poor Devil was quite confounded, but ſomething however muſt be reſolv'd on.

IT was as yet fine Weather, and by good Luck we had a Stock of uſeful Materials, only we had not many Nails. I was of Opinion, that the firſt thing we ought to do, was to provide ourſelves the beſt Lodging we could, and that for this Purpoſe our Hatchets and Mattocks would be of great Service. About 50 Paces from the River, and conſequently from our Boat there was a vaſt Lime-tree, under which we built a fine large triangular Hut, whither we brought our Baggage. Our Bows were alſo of great Uſe to us for hunting, otherwiſe we ſhould have been in Danger of being famiſh'd; but the Birds were not ſo tame as thoſe we had formerly met with, ſo that it requir'd a great deal of Art to catch them.

THE thing that gave us ſome Trouble was to make a Fire for the firſt Time, becauſe we had loſt our Steel, and the Fire that we had ſav'd went out the Day before we came hither. The

Place

Place where we were was ſo full of Sand and Shells, that we had ſeveral Days Ramble into the Country before we could meet with Flints that were for our Purpoſe; theſe were all that we wanted; for we had Rags which we caus'd to be well dry'd in the Sun for Tinder, and we did not want old Iron. As we had plenty of Wood, we did not let the firſt Fire we made go out, nor was there a Probability of its being extinguiſh'd a long time, for there were whole Trees which were burning continually.

WE ſtay'd about 8 Months in this Canton, where we liv'd by hunting. One while, in order to paſs away the Time, which we thought extremely tedious, we took our Boat, and made a ſhort Voyage upon the River, or out at Sea, according as the Weather and Tide permitted us, and ſometimes we climb'd up to the higheſt Eminencies in Hopes of ſpying ſome Veſſel to carry us out of our melancholy Solitude.

BEING weary at length of ſtaying always in the ſame Place, we reſolv'd to make a Sail ſome Leagues to the Weſt in Hopes not only of finding out the Place where our Ship was caſt away, for we could not be very far from it, but alſo of making ſome new Diſcovery. We took in Proviſions for a few Days, and riſing very early one Morning, we made towards the Strand in order to keep near the Sea. We walk'd ſo ſtoutly that if I am not miſtaken, we had travell'd above 15 Leagues by the Cloſe of next Day. The Shore was every where uniform, and there was no Variety of Objects to delight the Eye. We aſcended to the Downs, which in that Place

were

were very high, and the Proſpect was the ſame as far as our Eyes could reach it. A little freſh Gale of Wind that blew from the North Eaſt, oblig'd us to take Shelter all Night under a Hill, where the Sand retain'd a great deal of the Heat which it had contracted from the Sun in the Day. As ſoon as Morning appear'd, we enter'd the Flat Country where there was greater Variety, but then the Ways were much worſe. If we had been diſpos'd to have loaded ourſelves with Game, it was in our Power to have kill'd what we would, becauſe we had each a good Bow, and there was abundance of Animals of all Sorts.

AT length, on the fifth Day, as I take it, after our Departure, and about two or three o' Clock in the Afternoon we arriv'd at our River. As we had rambled a little from the Sea-ſide, we perceiv'd immediately by ſeveral Tokens with which we were very well acquainted, that we were no more than a League and a half diſtant from it, at which we were overjoy'd becauſe we were afraid that we had gone too far. Nevertheleſs, this little way ſeem'd very tedious to us; we knew it was a round-about Way which we might have avoided, tho' indeed we choſe it, and we were glad when we perceiv'd our Barrack at a Diſtance, becauſe there we expected to take our Reſt.

BUT we were ſoon after ſtruck with a Damp that chill'd the very Blood in our Veins, when we ſaw our Boat gone. We thought at firſt that we had not faſten'd it well, or that the violent Motion of the Water had broke the Rope by which it was moor'd. The Curioſity of knowing what was become of it, made us mend our Pace. We

curs'd

curs'd the very Day that we went upon this fatal Voyage, which depriv'd us of the Advantages that we receiv'd from this little Machine, and we began to blame one another for having firſt propos'd it, when *La Foret* on my Left-Hand, turning his Head about by chance towards our Hut, which was but a little Way behind us, gave a ſudden Start, and cry'd out, Oh Lord, what's that? what terrible Monſter is that in our Hut! I immediately turn'd about, and never was more ſurpriz'd in my Life than to ſee a great Creature there lain down, ſo that we could only diſcover its Back, and by the Hair of it we concluded it muſt be a Bear.

TO ſpeak the Truth, the Sight of ſo fierce an Animal as that ſeem'd to be, ſurpriz'd us. The Bows that we had were not Weapons fit to attack it, yet we were twenty times in the mind to advance towards it as ſoftly as poſſible, and let fly an Arrow at it from each of our Bows, and then to bend them again inſtantly in order to be ready to ſhoot it again, in caſe it had Strength enough left to make towards us; but for fear of miſſing it and being torn to Pieces, we choſe to go on without making any Noiſe, imagining that when it was awake it would go off towards the Wood rather than towards the Shore.

WE travell'd as if we had not made uſe of our Legs for a Week, ſo little did we feel the Fatigues we had undergone. Fear carry'd us on as ſwift as the Wind, without giving a Look either to the Right Hand or the Left, and as we always kept by the Side of the River, we were within two or three Paces of our Boat before we

ſpy'd it, and when we thought no more of it. This unexpected Sight reviv'd us in a Moment, but when we went to it, and found it faſten'd in another manner from what it us'd to be, we could not help being ſurpriz'd again. The Boat was in a naſty pickle, and the Oars and Stretchers were not in the order we left them. Beſides, we obſerv'd a Wicker-Basket about 18 Foot long in the form of a Bow juſt under the Water, with Cords ty'd to the two Ends, which was made uſe of for fiſhing, as was evident from ſeveral little dead Fiſhes about the Machine, which thoſe who had made uſe of it, had neglected to throw into the Water.

THESE Inſtances of humane Induſtry, made us conclude that the Country was not uninhabited, but the Point was to know what People they were; we could not imagine them to be ſociable and civiliz'd, and there was all the Appearance of their being Cannibals. Mean time, we were as hungry as Horſes, we had ſav'd none of the Proviſions we took with us, and the two or three Fowls that we brought were raw, ſo that if we would eat them we muſt dreſs them, and we had Fire ſtill burning near our Hut, as we could eaſily ſee by the Smoak, but we could not get to it for fear of the Bear. The Day was almoſt ſpent, ſo that there was a Neceſſity of coming to a Determination, if we intended to lie there. We reſolv'd therefore to carry our Boat with all Speed to that part of the River which was over-againſt our Hut, and then to give a terrible Hollow and Hoot, in order to frighten the Beaſt away.

WE did as we intended, but inſtead of rouſing the Bear, we were very much ſtartled to ſee a couple of Men run dreſs'd in Skins down to their Knees. Tho' the River, which was very deep, ſeparated us, yet we were afraid and kept upon our Guard; they approach'd us, and ſeeing us both dreſs'd, one of 'em call'd out, and ask'd who we were. O Heavens, *ſaid I*, that's *Normand*, I know him by his Voice. We are your Friends, *ſaid I*, and perhaps more than you imagine. Come over then in God's Name, *ſaid they*, and be not terrify'd at our Dreſs. We are poor unfortunate Wretches abandon'd by God and Man, but we are civiliz'd Chriſtians. That was enough to oblige us to go over to them. The Tears fall from my Eyes whenever I think on't; tho' they were very much alter'd, yet we knew them; we embrac'd one another with inexpreſſible Marks of Tenderneſs, and cry'd for Joy like Children. We went together to our Hut, where they gave us ſome little Fiſhes broil'd, but our Hearts were ſo full that we could not eat a Bit. Any Body that had ſeen us would have taken us for Statues; for we had no Motion, except in our Eyes, and all that we did was to ſtare at one another in ſuch a manner as ſhew'd our Aſtoniſhment.

AT length when we began to know one another, they oblig'd us to take ſome Nouriſhment, and after having heartily reproach'd us for our having left them, without giving them notice, and declar'd that they were both firmly of Opinion that we had been torn to pieces by wild Beaſts, they ask'd us, where we had been ſo long, and what was become of *Du Puis*, upon which we

were fain to oblige them with a general Account of our Voyage. They wiſh'd a thouſand times they had been in our Place, and according to them, we were very wrong in coming away from ſo fine a Country. Talk no more of it, *ſaid I*, you don't yet know the tenth Part of what I ſhall tell you hereafter. If it had not been for *La Foret*, you would not have ſeen us here, for I ſhould never have had a Thought of coming away as long as I liv'd. To-morrow you ſhall tell us how you came to our Hut, and how you have ſubſiſted ſo long in this Place without any manner of Commerce; but now I muſt retire to Reſt, for in truth I can hold out no longer: And indeed I ſlept like a Dormouſe, for our Savages were up 4 Hours before *La Foret* and I were awake.

WE had ſcarce bid one another Good-morrow, but we renew'd the Converſation upon the Subject of our laſt. *Normand* was deſirous to know more than I had told him, and we long'd to hear of their Adventures. It was at that time very hot, for we were not only in the middle of Autumn, or if you pleaſe in the Month of *May*, but the Sky was clear for many Days together, and the Weather mild and agreeable, ſo that we went and ſat down under the Shade of our Hut. About four Days ago, ſaid *Normand*, having a mind to bathe my ſelf in the River, I ask'd my Comrades, if any of 'em would go with me; but the only Man that conſented was *Alexander*. Tho' we each took a Bow with us, we did not intend to ſpend any time in hunting; nevertheleſs a very beautiful large Fowl ſprung up before us in the Way which we had a mind to ſhoot at, and we

we went out of our Road to follow it. You will ſay 'twas a Bird of good Omen to conduct us to this Place, for as ſoon as it was almoſt within Bow-ſhot, it again flew ſtraight before us in a direct Line without turning either to the Right Hand or the Left, and we purſued it till we came full-but, as one may ſay, upon your Barrack, and diſcover'd the little Boat; and then the Fowl diſappear'd, and we thought no more of it. A Hut and a Boat were ſuch Rarities in a Country like this, that we were aſtoniſh'd to ſee them. We thought at firſt, that ſome Ship had met with the Misfortune of being caſt away here-abouts, and that ſome few of the Company had eſcap'd Aſhore, ſo that we made no Scruple to come to the Door of this Hut, and ſeeing no Body appear notwithſtanding we talk'd loud, we both enter'd, and found a great many Things which confirm'd us in our Opinion. Nevertheleſs, my Comrade was for our returning, and coming again next Day with more in Company, but I forc'd him to ſtay out of a Principle of Curioſity which I had to know the Owner of ſo well contriv'd a Lodging. To paſs the time, we contriv'd a great Basket in form of a Semicircle, which by the Help of your Boat we made uſe of with Succeſs to bring the Fiſh Aſhore at thoſe Places where the Coaſt was ſteep, and where the River had broke in upon the Land. The third Day you came, and found us, God be prais'd, at a Time when we little thought of one another.

CHAP. XIII.

Containing what happen'd to the Reſidue of the Ship's Company, during the Author's Abſence; and the reſt of their Adventures 'till their Departure from this Country.

YOU know, *continued he*, that when you went away, we were building a Bark to carry us off. At firſt, every Man wrought hard at it, but as faſt as the Work advanc'd, the Zeal of our People ſlacken'd. The greateſt part of the Company were afraid ſhe was too ſmall, beſides that they began inſenſibly to be reconcil'd to theſe Southern Coaſts, where ſcarce a Day paſs'd but they made ſome new Diſcovery of Uſe for the Support of Life. It was five Months before the little Veſſel was rigg'd. How rigg'd? *ſaid I*, and pray whence had you wherewithal? The Captain, *reply'd he*, had been very ſparing of the greateſt part of his Proviſions; he had ſtill a Quantity of Bacon, Butter, Oil, Salt, Biſcuit, and Candles left, beſides what we were able to pick up here for the Suſtenance of the Body. When all was ready, he ſummon'd the Crew, and order'd all that had a mind to go with him to be in a Readineſs. I don't deſire, *ſaid he*, to force any Man; but for my own part, I'll venture a Paſſage in the Bark, and tho' the Voyage is dangerous, 'tis to be hop'd, that he who has preſerv'd us hitherto will take care of us for time to come. Several came to a Deter-

Determination on the Spot, the others knew not what to reſolve on: At length, we agreed to the Number of ſixteen of us, to remain together in this Country after having had a Promiſe from the others upon Oath to uſe their Intereſt and Intreaties with the King of *Portugal* to take Pity of us, and to order the firſt Ship that went off to the *Indies*, to come and fetch us away. There was great Grief, and many Tears ſhed at parting. They weigh'd Anchor one Morning at Break of Day, with a moderate Wind at South South Weſt, which together with the Tide carry'd them quite out of Sight in leſs than two Hours. They ſet out ſo well that we envy'd their Happineſs, and wiſh'd to be with 'em, becauſe we could not doubt that if the ſame good Weather continued, they would be ſoon at the *Cape of Good Hope*. The Wind held thus in the ſame Quarter above two Days, but on the third about Noon it chang'd, and on the 5th and 6th we had very bad Weather, ſo that we were in ſome Pain to think how the honeſt Lads far'd.

HAVING left the Shore, we went to ſettle in a Valley about four ſmall Leagues from this Place. The Country which is really very agreeable, is water'd with a Rivulet full of Fiſh, and abounds with Roots as big as red Beet, which are very good when well boil'd. On the South South Weſt Side there's a Wood of a conſiderable Extent, where we have Apples, Pears, Nuts, and other very pleaſant Fruits in abundance; and the other Side furniſhes us with as many Peaſe and Beans as we want. Our Captain left us all the Inſtruments he could ſpare: We had Fire-Arms,

Shot, Powder, Ropes, Hatchets, Spades, Hammers, Saws, Nails, Packthread, Needles, Blades, Pots, Kettles, Caldrons, and other Utenſils. With all this Baggage we went to that Place, and built two very commodious Huts, which have the true Air of Peaſants Cottages, and we cover'd them ſo well with Ruſhes, that we defy the Wind or Rain to hurt them.

WE liv'd there about a Year without ſcarce ever ſtraggling from one another, for we ſaw nothing on the Right Side or Weſtward, but barren Hills which no Body had yet thought worth their while to aſcend. Three of our Comrades reſolv'd one Day to hunt there, and at the ſame time to ſee if they could make no new Diſcovery. It took them up about three Hours to paſs the Mountain; from thence they enter'd into a very thick Wood, where they travell'd two Leagues without ſeeing any Way to get out of it. Whilſt they were muſing whether to return or go forwards, one of them ſaid that he heard a Noiſe which he could not tell what to make of, but it very much reſembled the Voice of a Man. This was a little ſurpriſing to the others, but they advanc'd that Way, and clapping their Ears to the Ground, they found that what he had ſaid was true. Two of them were for going nearer to ſee what it was, but the other ſtifly oppos'd it, and affirm'd that what they heard was the Voice of Savages, who would give them no Quarter if they fell into their Hands. He had no ſooner ſpoke, but they ſaw, a hundred Paces from them on the other Side of ſome Buſhes, a great Villain cover'd with the Skin of a Beaſt who no doubt ſpy'd them,

them, and ran probably to tell his Gang that there was a Prey at hand. This at leaſt was what our Companions thought of it, and not judging it proper to ſtay for their coming, they turn'd back and ſcamper'd away. They had learnt by Experience the Neceſſity of obſerving the Sun or Stars in a Foreſt which one is not well acquainted with, and they did this to ſuch a Nicety that they got out almoſt at the very ſame Place where they enter'd. When they came upon the Hills, they ſtood ſtill to take a little Breath; for then they were out of that Danger which threaten'd them in the Wood where, tho' perhaps it was only a Panic Fear, they imagin'd ſeveral times that they heard the Noiſe of Purſuers juſt at their Heels.

WE were very ſure when they came back that they had been in a Fright, for they look'd as if they had been hag-ridden, and were all over in a Muck-Sweat as if they had been dipp'd in Water, but we little thought what was the Matter. We were prodigiouſly alarm'd at ſo unexpected a Narrative, and really knew not what to do, whether to keep our old Quarters, or to abandon Bag and Baggage, and encamp on the other Side of the River. For my part, I was for fortifying our preſent Poſt. I had been in three or four Campaignes heretofore, and had learnt the Art of guarding againſt an Enemy, ſo that my Companions agreed to do as I thought fit. In the Evening we only poſted Centinels to prevent a Surprize.

NEXT Morning at Day-Break, I mark'd out a Square about our two Huts, each Side whereof was 35 Geometrical Paces in length, after which we broke Ground, and began with a Breaſt-Work

4 Foot high to ſhelter us from any Attacks that might be made that Way. Then we rais'd and widen'd our Works in ſuch a manner that the Rampart was 20 Foot in the Baſe, and 6 in Height, beſides a Parapet above that of 5 Foot. The Ditch form'd by the Earth we caſt up for this Purpoſe was very broad and deep. In the Front oppoſite to the Mountain, I left a Slope of 6 Foot only, which I cover'd alſo with a ſmall Half-Moon, and ſecur'd with a Traverſe. All this was finiſh'd in 7 Weeks. Mean time, we heard no Talk of any Enemy, and ſometimes could not help rallying thoſe who had put us into ſuch a Ferment.

AT firſt every Body was afraid to ſtir out for Proviſions, and now they did it without any Scruple, but it did not hold ſo long. Two of our Men going out one Day at Sun-riſe for Plunder, had not the good Luck to come back again; perhaps they were ſo imprudent as to expoſe themſelves more than others had done, at leaſt they had talk'd of doing ſo more than once. The Loſs of them made us very uneaſy, and we thereupon encompaſs'd our Fortreſs with Paliſadoes.

WHILE we were at this Work, we perceiv'd a Company of Men coming down the Mountain very faſt, which put us into the greater Conſternation, becauſe three of our Comrades were then gone a hunting, ſo that we were but eleven in Number. I order'd my Men to charge their Muſkets, and not to diſcover themſelves 'till the Enemy was come to the Ditch, where they were to be ſaluted with at leaſt five Diſcharges. When the Drolls were at hand, we ſaw very plain that they were Savages. They ſeem'd to be about three-

threeſcore and ten, all luſty well-made Fellows, cover'd with Skins down to their Legs, and laden with Bows and Arrows. A great many of 'em had Clubs 5 or 6 Foot long. 'Tis probable that the Knaves had ſpy'd us before they came in a Body, for they did not ſeem in the leaſt ſurpriz'd at the Work we had made. Not one of our Men diſcover'd himſelf. I had planted a great Branch full of Leaves before me, thro' which I could obſerve the Enemy without being ſeen. 'Tis probable that they thought to have ſurpriz'd us, becauſe they came without making the leaſt Noiſe to the Brink of the Ditch, and there they ſtopp'd, not knowing what Courſe to take to come at the Place; but I did not think proper to give them time to examine Things too cloſely, ſo that I order'd five of my Men to fire upon 'em, and to charge again with all Expedition that they might be entertain'd with a continual Fire. They perform'd their Part ſo well that three of the Savages fell upon the Spot.

THIS terrify'd them, becauſe they knew not what to think of their Comrades ſudden Fall. Indeed they ſaw the Fire and Smoak of our Arms, but I very much queſtion whether they diſcover'd the Men that gave Fire. They muſt conclude it to be Lightning, or ſome Devil that ſtruck them, at leaſt we imagin'd ſo by the horrid Cries they all made looking towards Heaven. I ſaid to my Comrades, Let us make an Advantage of the Terror of thoſe Miſcreants; let the other five give Fire. This Diſcharge with the Fire I made, fetch'd down two more which increas'd their Aſtoniſhment. Then we ſhew'd ourſelves all at once

crying

crying out like Madmen, at which time the five firſt gave Fire again, and kill'd two more upon the Spot. We ſhould have diſpatch'd 'em all after this manner, but they were not ſuch Fools as to ſtay any longer. Seven of the ſtrongeſt took each a dead Man upon his Shoulders, and fled with as much Precipitation as if they had been purſued by an Army.

THE three Men of our Company that were abſent, were not ſo far on the other Side but they heard us fire very plainly. They imagin'd there muſt be ſomething more than ordinary in the matter, becauſe they knew we would not have waſted our Gunpowder without a great Neceſſity. They lay hid for ſome time in a Thicket, with as much Game as they could carry, and in the Evening they advanc'd, and glad they were when they firſt ſaw the Centinel walking on the Breaſt-Work, where he was poſted on Purpoſe to give them the Signal that there was no Danger.

OUR Apprehenſion that the Raſcals would return ſtronger, and more reſolute, made us finiſh our Paliſadoes with all Speed; and for want of a Breaſtwork we fortify'd the Rampart with Fraiſes. Beſides, it was reſolv'd that ſome of our Men ſhould go by Turns to the Downs to fetch two ſmall Pieces of Cannon which our Captain left behind him. It coſt a great deal of Time and Pains to draw them to our Fort. Then we provided a Quantity of little Flints, of which our Brook was full, in order to put into the Cartridges. In the mean time, we did not hear the leaſt Word of the Enemy for 8 Months together, ſo that we ſcarce thought any more of the Scoundrels

drels 'till one Sunday at Noon, when the Centinel alarm'd us, juſt as we were at Dinner. Upon this I ran out to ſee what was the matter, and God knows I was not a little aſtoniſh'd to ſee the Mountain cover'd with a Swarm of our Enemies advancing like hungry Wolves to devour us. To ſpeak the real Truth, the ſtouteſt Hearts among us trembled for Fear, for we did not doubt but the Raſcals came reſolv'd either to conquer or die, and that they had taken all the neceſſary Precautions for executing their Deſign. They advanc'd very quietly; I was of the ſame Opinion as at the firſt time, that it was adviſable for us to conceal ourſelves, and not to fire 'till they came upon the Glacis, but *Le Grand* thought on the contrary, that the beſt Way would be to intimidate them before they came too near, and to make uſe of our Cannon, ſince we had them at hand. Accordingly, as ſoon as we ſaw them advanc'd within 3 or 400 Paces of our Fort, one Piece was diſcharg'd: Whether it did any Execution or no, we could not ſee, but they ſtopp'd ſhort, whereupon we diſcharg'd the other Piece which carry'd off ſeveral of their Men, as we were told by ſome of our Comrades who being to the Windward, proteſted they ſaw it very plain. However, this did not terrify them, on the contrary they renew'd their March, and came on apace. They were at leaſt 400 reſolute Men, a Number far ſuperior to ours. As ſoon as they were within Reach, we fir'd upon them briskly, but they were not diſmay'd, and notwithſtanding the Number of Men they loſt, they came up even to our Paliſadoes, where ſome ſtoop'd, and others leaping

ing

ing on their Backs threw themſelves over with great Agility and terrible Fury: In the mean time our Cannon, which were charg'd with Stones, did Wonders, and yet for all this, if they had but attack'd us in ſeveral Places at a time, inſtead of attacking us in one only, we ſhould have been infallibly ruin'd. Our *Chevaux de Friſe* were alſo of great Service to us, becauſe for want of proper Inſtruments to pluck them up, they broke but two of them. This however made a Gap which gave an Opportunity to one of the boldeſt of them to climb even to our Breaſt-work, and others were preparing to follow; but three of our Men falling deſperately upon them, put them to the Sword, and made them tumble from Top to Bottom. In fine, three or four of the beſt Men they had, being Eye-Witneſſes of this ſmart Rencounter, gave way, upon which they all fled, and after a Fight of three Hours, quitted the Field with much more Rapidity than they came to it.

WE were overjoy'd at this Deliverance, which we had Reaſon to think a happy one. Next Day, when we went out to ſee what Slaughter we had made, we found 72 dead, and 13 Wretches gaſping for Life, whom we inſtantly diſpatch'd with the But-Ends of our Muſquets, and after having made a great Pit, we caſt them all into it, for fear the Stench of their Carcaſes might infect the Air. The only wounded Man we had was one that was poſted upon the Breaſt-work, who was ſhot in the Thigh with an Arrow, but was ſoon after cur'd.

AFTER this Skirmiſh we doubled our Diligence for our Preſervation; we were ſtill in Dread.

Dread of our conquer'd Enemy, becauſe we apprehended that in time they would be wiſer; but we never ſaw them afterwards, nor heard any thing of 'em any more than of our two Comrades, whom to be ſure the Villains murder'd and devour'd.

NOW you mention eating, *ſaid I*, methinks 'tis time to talk of laying the Cloth. If you'll be rul'd by me, we will dine firſt, and then ſee what we have to ſay to one another more. Since that time, ſaid *Normand*, nothing happen'd worth your Notice. Are you all living ſtill? I ask'd him. No verily, *ſaid he*, four died two Years ago, and there's another very ill, but perhaps the Sight of you will contribute to his Recovery; at leaſt I am perſuaded, that both he and others will be tranſported to ſee you. I beg let us go to them, we have time enough before us, elſe the poor Fellows will not know what's become of us. Tho' we were not yet recover'd of the Fatigues of the preceding Days, yet after having taken a Bit without Loſs of Time, we travell'd away.

THE Sun had been ſet a long while when we came to our Journey's End, but the Sky was clear, and the Moon almoſt at Full. I could not help laughing when we came about 100 Paces from the Fort, to hear one cry, *Who goes there?* and to hear *Normand* ſay, *A Friend.* Yet this was not all; you were but two when you went, *ſaid the Centinel*, but I ſee more. Officers! Guard! At theſe Words, *Le Grand* came out with a Gun in his Hand to take a View of us. I was very well pleas'd with this good Guard, eſpecially at that time when I was come from a Country where they

they knew not what a Guard meant. *Normand* ſtepp'd before us, and diſcover'd who we were, at which they came upon us all at once, and had like to have ſmother'd us with Embraces. Here we were oblig'd to give another Narrative of our Adventures, and to hear ourſelves bitterly reproach'd for not having improv'd our Fortunes.

LE GRAND ſaid, why Friends, do you ſeek for Treaſures and Empires? What need have we of any thing but plain Food and Raiment? You were in a Place where you enjoy'd theſe two Advantages at once, where all Perſons are upon a Level, except here and there a few to whom the others pay a ſmall voluntary Deference on Account of their Virtues, and the Care they take to adminiſter Juſtice. You were alſo familiar with the King, who nouriſh'd you with the Fat of a plentiful fruitful Country, a Land of Bleſſing and Peace, from whence Soldiers are baniſh'd as much as Hangmen, and where humane Blood is ſacred and ſafe from the Rage and Tyranny of great Men? I pray, what would you have more? Go where you pleaſe, you will never find ſo much again elſewhere. But 'tis the Foible of moſt Men, they ſeldom are contented with what they enjoy, and in whatſoever State and Place they are, they always think that to be happy they muſt change it.

ALL this moralizing, reply'd *La Foret*, is to no Purpoſe, we are come away, and we will not go back again were we to want Bread elſewhere. He is in the right, *ſaid I*, when Errors are committed, 'tis needleſs to think any more of 'em, unleſs it be to be a Warning to us at another Time.

Time. If ever ſuch good Luck ſhould happen to us again, perhaps we ſhall know better how to improve it.

NEXT Day we went to fetch the remainder of the Baggage which we had left near the River, and came hither with it, deſigning to live and die here with the reſt of our Company.

I WAS mightily pleas'd to ſee the good Order which *Le Grand* kept in this Fort with Reſpect to Manners. The leaſt immodeſt Word was forbid on Pain of public Correction. He read Prayers every Morning and Evening at which they all attended, for tho' they were for moſt part Catholics, yet they liv'd together as if they had been all of one Religion. They all profeſs'd to love God and their Neighbour, as much as themſelves; every one took his Turn to go and fetch in Proviſions, to dreſs the Victuals, to mount the Guard, and ſo of the reſt, while others walk'd Abroad for the Air, or employ'd themſelves in what they pleas'd. It was an eaſy Matter for us to accommodate ourſelves to the Maxims of this petty Republick. The ſick Perſon I found there was cur'd, ſo that our Company conſiſted of 12 Perſons.

WE liv'd 27 Months together without any conſiderable Accident among us, but then one of our Comrades died, whoſe Name was *Gaſcagnet*, a Native of the *Cevennes*. He had been ſadly afflicted with an *Aſthma* for ſeveral Years, which had made him as lean as a Rake. When he was dead, I begg'd Leave to open him, which was readily granted. For this Operation I made uſe of ſome ſorry Raſors and Sciſſors which my Comrades had ſav'd. I found his Lungs contracted, and

and dry as a Spunge. The Trachian Artery or Pipe of the Lungs was hard, inflexible, and wide enough to put an Egg into it. The Liver was green, one of its Parts was gritty, and the other which seem'd perfectly ulcerated, stuck to his Kidneys. I found 4 Stones as big as Prune-Stones in the Bladder of the Gall, which was as yellow as Wax. As to the Heart, it seem'd in as good Order to outward Appearance as one could wish, but when I open'd it, I found a Hole in the *Septum Medium* of the Size of a Silver Penny, edg'd with a Membrane which without doubt was form'd there to hinder its closing up.

I CONFESS that this surpriz'd me, but after a little Consideration I guess'd that the Deceased having always labour'd under a Difficulty of Breathing, and his Lungs by consequence wanting to be sufficiently cool'd, Nature was willing to provide a Remedy, as it does, tho' by other Means, for Infants in their Mother's Womb, and which indeed do not breathe at all, inasmuch as the Blood is circulated in them in a very different Manner from what it is when they are born. For, whereas in this Case, the Blood which is contain'd in the Veins, and push'd from the Extremities of the Body towards the Heart, which it enters thro' the *Vena Cava*, discharges itself into the right Cavity from whence it passes into the Arterious Vein, afterwards into the *Arteria Venosa*, and from thence into the left Cavity of the Heart, from whence it is push'd to the Extremities of the Animal by the *Aorta*, which communicates by its Branches with those of the *Vena Cava*; in the other case on the contrary, the Blood which issues from the Right

Right Cavity passes immediately from the Trunk of the Arterious Vein into the *Aorta*, at the same time that it also flows immediately from the *Vena Cava* into the Trunk of the Veinous Artery, which from thence enters and dilates it self in the Left Cavity of the Heart.

I OBSERV'D nothing extraordinary in the Intestines. The Ureters and Kidneys were full of Gravel, so that no wonder the poor Man was always complaining, and that he died in the flower of his Age when he was but 34 Years old. We bury'd him in the Counterscarp.

'TWAS scarce six Weeks after, that we had a horrid Earthquake, which was follow'd with as furious a Tempest as I ever saw in my Life. The Mountain to the West of our Fort, rent in twain from Top to Bottom, and at the same time there gush'd out a Torrent of muddy Water with extraordinary Impetuosity. By good Luck it did not come down directly upon us, otherwise our Works would have run a very great Risque. This Inundation lasted 'till next Day. All our Valley was under Water, and we were three Days without being able to get Abroad. When the bad Weather was over, and our Meadows dry, we ascended the Mountain to see part of the Damage done by it. We found that the Cleft made in the Mountain was at least 120 Foot wide below, and above 50 towards the Top. There was a Fountain near the Top of it, which after this was never more seen, and I was the first who observ'd that it was gone. This surpriz'd us all, but what astonish'd us more, was that half of the Forest which was below on the other Side, was swal-

ſwallow'd up, and that inſtead of Trees which were there before, there appear'd a very great Lake. Theſe prodigious Events gave us Occaſion to admire the Works of Providence.

LE GRAND was ſorry for the Loſs of this Fountain, becauſe we often went that Way to divert ourſelves, and were very fond of its Water, which was wonderfully fine and clear. He could not comprehend what Relation this Fountain had with the cleaving of the Rock, and the others were even more aſtoniſh'd at it than he. Don't you ſee, *ſaid I*, that there could not have been ſuch a Gap in this great Body, unleſs the Particles of which 'tis compos'd had met together, and that conſequently the Channels thro' which the Water paſs'd that form'd the Fountain were ſtopp'd up, juſt in the ſame manner as the Pores of a Spunge cloſe in Proportion as 'tis ſqueez'd. I am not ſure whether you don't banter, *ſaid one of 'em*, one would think ſo by your Looks, tho' what you ſay ſeems probable enough. No doubt I banter, *ſaid I*, for there's a Natural and Phyſical Reaſon for what you admire, which they are not ignorant of who have the leaſt Notion of Philoſophy. We know nothing of Philoſophy, ſaid *Le Grand*, but if you think we are capable of underſtanding you, it will be a Pleaſure to us to philoſophize with us concerning our Fountain. I will, *ſaid I*, with all my Heart, becauſe we have nothing elſe to do now, provided you won't think me a Pedant.

THE Globe we inhabit, *ſaid I*, is compos'd of an infinite Number of various Particles, the chief of which are Terreſtrial and Aqueous. This com-

compound Body turns in 24 Hours round its proper Center. What, ſaid *Le Grand*, does the Earth turn round? Yes, yes, reply'd *La Foret*, I heard him explain this Phœnomenon before ſo clearly, that there's no room to doubt of it. Let him explain it ever ſo clearly, ſaid *Le Grand*, I will never believe any thing contrary to my Senſes and the Holy Scriptures, in which there are a great many plain Paſſages that poſitively contradict what you advance. That your Senſes often deceive you is very eaſy to prove, *continued I*, and as to the Scriptures, 'tis certain that the Deſign of the Holy Ghoſt was never to make us Mathematicians and Philoſophers, or elſe he would have taken care to explain thoſe Paſſages of *Geneſis* concerning the Creation, which puzzle a great many People, and which a Prieſt of the Country where *La Foret* and I have beeen, obſerv'd that he had heard talk of. Nor would he have fail'd to have told us the true Proportion of the Circumference of a Circle to its Diameter, when he treats of the Sea of Copper which *Solomon* caus'd to be plac'd in his ſtately Temple, and which is pretended according to the Vulgar Opinion to be from 30 to 10, or from 21 to 7, whereas it is as from 22 to 7, or at leaſt there does not want much of it, as is demonſtrable from the Mathematics. God, in order to render himſelf intelligible, condeſcends to talk with us in our own Jargon, and accommodates himſelf to our Phraſe; for when he ſpeaks after his own Manner, 'tis impoſſible for us to underſtand him, and what he ſays is myſterious beyond our Penetration. Now all this is eaſy to be comprehended, and is liable to no Objection.

GRANT-

GRANTING therefore that the Earth turns, the Parts of it which are in greateſt Agitation muſt be thoſe which are fartheſt from its Centre, as is eaſy to prove from ſeveral curious Experiments. This being ſo, the Water which beſides the Motion of the whole Body wherewith it is carry'd, has a particular one that renders it liquid, muſt by conſequence lead the Van. Then comes the Air which is another Liquid compos'd of Parts much more ſubtle, and more agitated than thoſe of the Water, which alſo makes it go before it, and form a ſort of Down round the terreſtrial Globe, which compoſes our Atmoſphere, and extends about 2 Leagues diſtance round the Surface of the Earth; and 'tis in this Atmoſphere, by the Way, in which are form'd Rain, Snow, Lightning, Thunder, and all the Meteors in general.

HOLD, ſaid *Le Grand*, according to your Philoſophy the Bodies that have the leaſt Motion muſt be the neareſt to the Center of our Globe: Now the Aqueous Parts move faſter than the Terreſtrial, therefore the Water muſt conſequently cover the whole Surface of the Earth, and we ſhould have a perpetual Flood, which is not the Caſe.

THE Objection is good, *ſaid I*, and 'tis certainly true, that if God by his Almighty Power ſhould level the Mountains, and lay all the Hills in general even with the Valleys, there would be no Appearance of dry Land. 'Tis an Argument which perhaps might very well be made uſe of alſo to favour the Notion of the univerſal Deluge, were it not that the Scripture ſpeaks of Moun-

Mountains before and after. But you ought to consider that Nature cannot always have its free Course, by reason of Obstacles which hinder it. The Water of a River ought according to the Laws which are prescrib'd it, to follow the Course of its Channel, yet it often happens that an impetuous Wind stops it, and drives it back even to its Source. The Mountains and Rocks form'd by Providence are Barriers which the Ocean cannot go over, just as Liquor which is in a Vessel cannot surpass the Brims, but bring the Brims lower, as I said just now of Mountains, and you will see it quickly run over.

I RETURN therefore to my Subject, and say that there being no Vacuum in the World; No Vacuum in the World! said *Le Grand*, interrupting me. Alas! I submit, *said I.* No, *reply'd he*, I am in the wrong to interrupt you so often: Go on, I beg; you did well to check me, for I am sensible I should have talk'd idly; from this time I won't speak a Word more. The Moment, *continued I*, that any Particles of Air or Fire more subtile and agitated than others rise, an equivalent Portion of others must necessarily descend at the same time to supply their Place. Now you must know that most Mountains are hollow towards the Bottom as you see this is now 'tis open, and for as much as the Earth is porous, and full of Crevices and Channels, it happens that the Sea forces into those Passages, and fills those hollow Mountains to the same height as the Ocean.

I UNDERSTAND you, said *Le Grand*, you need say no more, you mean that the Sea being as

high as the higheſt Mountains, which all the World acknowleges, and is eaſy to perceive when one is upon the Coaſt, the Air which preſſes the Water upon the Ocean, forces it to paſs thro' the low Conduits of the Earth, and to riſe to the Top of the Rocks, from whence it runs out by Streams, which form the Fountains or Springs, juſt as the Liquor which is pour'd into a Veſſel where there's a Pipe or an Arm, riſes in that Arm to the ſame Height as it is in the Veſſel, and there runs out of it if there be the leaſt Hole. This is reaſoning exactly like a Philoſopher, *ſaid I*, your Concluſion is very good, 'tis pity that your Principles are bad. For 'tis not true, that the Sea is ſo high as the Shore, if it were, we ſhould ſoon be drown'd; ſo that 'tis a vulgar Error, the Reaſon of which is very well known to thoſe who have only learnt the firſt Elements of Opticks. But the Caſe is thus.

WHEN the Water comes to the Foot of thoſe hollow Mountains, 'tis heated by the Sun-Beams, and riſes in Vapours to the Roofs, which when collected like the Water of a boiling Pot againſt the Lid, form Drops, and thoſe Drops, Streams which run out at the firſt Out-let they meet with, and form what we call Springs, as ſeveral Springs form a Brook, and ſeveral Brooks a River, which carries back to the Sea the Water that came from it, and by conſequence only circulates it like the Blood in the Veins of a living Animal.

THERE! ſaid *La Foret*, what d'ye ſay to that? yet this is nothing. The Explanation as clear as it is, depends on the Knowlege of other Things

Things which I have heard him relate elſewhere, and which you muſt needs be acquainted with in order to underſtand the Matter throughly. Be that as it will, reply'd *Le Grand*, I think all this is very good, and I wiſh that our Doctor would entertain us in the ſame Manner on the Formation of Meteors, which muſt needs be a moſt diverting Subject. I had rather, *ſaid I*, give you ſome Notion of the Mathematics, of which I have learnt ſomething. 'Tis a Science which perhaps may be of Service to you if ever we go from hence, at leaſt it will help to paſs away the Time. They all conſented to my Propoſal with Joy, only *Le Grand*, who was fond of the Sciences, ſhook his Head. You have put in a Clauſe for Natural Philoſophy, *ſaid he*, which is not diſpleaſing to me at all; I dearly love to treat of the Works of Nature, nevertheleſs we muſt not require too much at the Hands of our Maſters: Be ſo good only before we conclude this agreeable Converſation, to tell us what your Opinion is with regard to the Deluge; for in the Manner you talk'd juſt now, I fancy you are of the Vulgar Opinion: Tell us freely whether you think it was Univerſal or Partial.

AS Salvation is not at all concern'd in the Queſtion, *ſaid I*, which way ſoever it be determin'd, I came without any Scruple into the Opinion of one of the Regents of my College, who publickly declar'd, that it was impoſſible for all the Water in the World to cover the whole Earth to ſuch a Height as the Scripture ſeems to mention. But is not God Omnipotent, ſaid *Le Grand*, and beſides, is it not ſaid that the Flood-Gates of

Heaven were open'd? Undoubtedly, *said I*, but the Divines don't pretend to make this a Miracle; if they did, I should not have one Word to say. I don't deny but he who created the Universe can create new Bodies of Water when he will, but I affirm that if he made new Waters for that Purpose, he afterwards annihilated them. And as for the Flood-Gates of Heaven, 'tis a poetical and metaphorical Expression us'd by the Author to dignify his Subject.

HOW comes it to pass, *said another*, that as there is a Region of Fire, there might not as well be a Region of Water, which Providence might make use of upon Occasion, as an inexhaustible Magazine, either to moisten the Earth in a Time of Drought, or to lay certain Countries under Water? That, reply'd *Le Grand*, is a meer Trifle. The first is a Fiction of the ancient Philosophers: The second a *Chimæra* of Children, which nevertheless I have heard urg'd by Persons of Sense. For in short, where should a watery Region be plac'd? If above the Firmament, it would have no Correspondence with the Earth; if under, 'tis impossible we should see the Fix'd Stars, because the least Mist deprives us of the Light of the Sun. But without going so much out of the way for a Remedy, let it only be consider'd, that when it has rain'd 8 or 10 Days together in any one Place, there is a Flood; now suppose it only to rain every where with the same Violence for forty Days together, and then the Thing does not seem to me to be attended with so much Difficulty.

YOU

YOU don't conſider, *ſaid I to him*, when there is a great deal of Rain in one Place, there's too great a Drought in another, and that what the Sun exhales in one Part the Clouds carry to another. If it were to rain every where with ſo much Violence, the whole Ocean as it were muſt firſt of all be exhal'd in Vapours, in which Caſe all that fell would but barely ſuffice to fill the low Places from whence the Water was drawn to form the Clouds, ſo that it would require a great many more to cover the whole Globe to the Height of 15 Cubits above the *Alpes* and the *Peak* of *Teneriff*; Mountains that are perhaps two Leagues high; which you plainly ſee is impoſſible.

MEAN time, another Difficulty occurs with reſpect to the Size of the Ark. My Maſter, who taught me Mathematics, had the Curioſity to take the Dimenſions of this great Veſſel, and to calculate the Contents of it; then he examin'd *Pliny*, and conſulted all the Books of Voyages in order to make out an exact Liſt of all the various Animals that we have any Knowlege of at this Time. Finally, he computed how much Proviſion would be neceſſary for a Year's Subſiſtence of all thoſe Creatures, and 8 Perſons; but when he had collected all this together, he found the Bulk to be ſo great, that the Veſſel could not be big enough by far to contain it, not to mention the Animals which we never heard of, and which are undoubtedly very numerous.

BUT, ſaid *Le Grand*, have we a right Notion of the Meaſures mention'd by *Moſes*? Yes, ſaid I, the Cubit we read of in the Scripture was a

Foot and half long, and that you may not think we talk at random, you muſt know that the Ancients perceiving that Men are not alike tall and ſtout, and that conſequently their Limbs muſt be in Proportion very different from one another, agreed, inſtead of making uſe of their Elbows for their common Meaſures in Traffic, to take four Barley-Corns laid flat one by another for the Meaſure of a Finger's Breadth, four of which made a Hand's Breadth, or three Inches, and twelve Inches or ſixteen Fingers Breadths a Foot: One and half of theſe Feet made a Cubit, and five Feet the Geometrical Pace, whereas the ordinary Pace is but two Foot and half. The Rod was twelve Foot. The Furlong conſiſted of a hundred and twenty five Foot, and the *Italian* Mile of eight Furlongs, from whence you perceive that the firſt Meaſures that were invented by Mankind, came afterwards to the *Greeks*, *Romans*, and ſeveral other Nations. This being ſo, 'tis natural to conclude that the Deluge related by *Moſes* was not univerſal with regard to the Earth, but only with regard to Man, The World was then in its Infancy, and its Inhabitants had not had Time enough to multiply and ſpread. God laid that Part of it which was inhabited under Water, it was not neceſſary for him to drown all the other Parts, accordingly it was enough for *Noah* to preſerve only the Species of Cattle which were in thoſe Countries, in which caſe the Ark was ſufficient to hold more, and conſequently all the other Difficulties vaniſh. For as to the Expreſſion of *the whole World*, 'tis very common for the Sacred Writers to make uſe of it to ſignify a Part of it; witneſs

the

the Paſſage where 'tis ſaid with reſpect to *Joſeph* and *Mary*, that all the World ſhould be enroll'd, which every Body knows cannot be underſtood of more than thoſe Countries which were under the Government of the *Roman* Emperor.

UPON this all my Companions retir'd with a Reſolution to dive as far as poſſible into the Mathematics, and to improve by my Lectures. Accordingly we began next Day with *Euclid*'s Elements. Tho' that Author had not gone thro' my Hands in ſeveral Years, I had taken ſo much Care to revolve the principal Contents of his ſix firſt Books often in my Mind that I ſeldom heſitated in the Demonſtrations I made from him. From thence we proceeded to Geometry in which indeed I was not ſo expert, beſides that in order to go through a regular Courſe of it, we wanted Books and Inſtruments, which there was no Appearance of recovering where we were; and in fine we concluded with Fortification. I ſhould have been glad alſo to have taught them a little of Algebra, but *Le Grand* was the only Perſon that ſeem'd inclinable to apply to it, which indeed was but now and then, and he was quite diſcourag'd from proceeding, as ſoon as we came to the Cubic Equations.

WE ſpent ſeveral Years in theſe fine Sciences, inſomuch that there were no ſmooth ſandy Places but what were full of Geometrical Figures, eſpecially in the Downs and upon the Shore, to which we often went for the Air. We were there one Day when the Rolling-in of the Tide gave us an Occaſion to diſcourſe of the Flux and Reflux of the Ocean, during which we were ex-

tremely surpriz'd to see to the West as far as our Eye-sight could reach, a Body which we had not discover'd before. We were at first divided in our Opinions what it should be; some thought that as the Water was low, it was the Point of some Rock, others would have it to be a little Cloud. *Normand* affirm'd he had seen the same Thing before, and the rest asserted 'twas a Ship. To be certain of the matter I fix'd two Arrows in the Ground, which form'd a right Line with this Body, and placing myself behind them, I observ'd immediately that it mov'd, and that consequently it could not be a Rock. We then were very attentive to observe whether the Figure of it did not change as Clouds do commonly, which spread, increase, or vanish by degrees; but not perceiving any Alteration for half an Hour, only that it was a little bigger if any thing, we concluded that it must absolutely be a Ship, which was sent by Providence to deliver us from our tedious Solitude.

THE Wind blew a little fresh, and as it was not yet Noon, we had Hopes of its coming up with us before Night, since it coasted along the Shore. *La Foret*, who was more afraid than any of us that so rare and unexpected a Conveniency should escape us, was of Opinion that four of us should go aboard our Long-Boat, which we had carefully laid up near twelve Years ago in the Hut that we built at our Arrival, and had not made use of since, and venture out with nothing but our Oars in order to meet the Ship, for fear she should put off from the Coast before they who navigated her knew we were here, and that con-

conſequently we ſhould never have ſuch another Opportunity if we neglected this. His Opinion was approv'd of, the Boat was tackled out, and *La Foret* with three others went aboard her. Tho' they had but two Oars, they tugg'd ſo hard that in a very little time we loſt Sight of 'em. Mean time the great Ship drew near, and we began to diſtinguiſh the Sails when we obſerv'd the Sun approach the Horizon. We had at leaſt a League and half to travel to the firſt Lodge that we had made between our Fort and the Sea, and the Moon roſe late. Theſe Conſiderations made us think of retiring to it, which we did, and found there ſome Remains of Proviſion that we had brought thither in the Morning, which were a very ſeaſonable Relief to us.

THO' we were fatigued, it was impoſſible for us to cloſe our Eyes, and there was not one Man of us but was mortally uneaſy. In the Morning before Day we return'd the directeſt Way we could find towards the Shore. At our Arrival we were overjoy'd to ſee the great Ship lying at Anchor a little lower about a League at Sea, and two Long-Boats at the ſame time coming Aſhore, ſo that we advanc'd to meet them at Landing. The Captain of the Veſſel not knowing who they were that came aboard him detain'd two of 'em, and made uſe of their Comrades as Guides to eight Men whom he ſent off in the Ship-Boat to know who we were. Immediately we were order'd to go and fetch our Baggage, and to return with it as ſoon as poſſible, becauſe the Ground there not being very fit for Anchorage, if the leaſt foul Weather had happen'd it would have been

dangerous. Six of the Ship's Crew went along with us. When we came to our Fort, we took what we thought the beſt of every thing, and left the reſt for the Savages, if ever they thought fit to return. Notwithſtanding all our Haſte 'twas Night before we came to the Ship. *La Foret* had already inform'd the Captain of the Nature of the Country which we were going to leave, or rather had taken care to give him as diſadvantageous a Character of it as he could; ſo that having no great mind to ſee it, he immediately ſet ſail, and gave us Cauſe to thank God for delivering us from that miſerable Place, where 18 Years ago we had the Misfortune to be caſt Aſhore

CHAP. XIV.

The Author's Paſſage from the Southern Countries to Goa, *where he was impriſon'd by the Inquiſition. The Story of a* Chineſe *whom he met with there, and the Manner how they got their Liberty.*

THE Captain of the Ship was a true *Spaniard*, who in every Action diſcover'd the Pride and Genius of his Country, ſo that tho' I ſhould have been glad to have known by what happy Accident this Ship was conducted to the Coaſts of a Country where no Body trades, it was impoſſible for me to learn it, for there was not one of the Ship's Company that knew any thing of the Matter, and

I was afraid to ask the Churl for fear of being huff'd as others had been. The Surgeon who ſpoke a little *Latin*, only ſaid to me one Day that they came from the *American* Iſlands, whither they had convoy'd ſome Merchant Ships, and carry'd Orders concerning the Releaſe of four or five Ships which the Chevalier *Tyſſot* Governor of *Surinam* had caus'd to be ſtopp'd by way of Repriſal, and that immediately after the Delivery of thoſe Orders they ſail'd towards the Southern Countries where they went Aſhore twice. At the firſt time, continued he, nothing preſented worthy of the Captain's Attention. At our ſecond Landing which might be about ſeventy or eighty Leagues from the Place where you were, ten Men were ſent Aſhore, but only two return'd who were thoſe that were left to take care of the Long-Boat, for the others had been attack'd by the Natives of the Country who purſued them as far as the Downs, where they took and cut them to pieces in Sight of their Comrades, who had much ado to eſcape becauſe the Water was low, and their Boat was on dry Ground. We had a Deſire to have landed there alſo where we found you, but I fancy the Account you gave of thoſe Parts, put our Captain quite out of Conceit with it, which whether true or not, I thought I heard ſay that we were going in a ſtraight Line to *Goa*.

ACCORDINGLY I obſerv'd, tho' I knew not why, that we had entirely abandon'd the Country where we had been, and that we were ſteering towards the North-Eaſt. But we could not finiſh our Voyage without ſtopping, for the Captain was oblig'd to put in at the Iſle of *Bour-*

bon, five or six Degrees East of *Madagascar*, where we stay'd ten Days to recruit ourselves, and to take in fresh Water.

DURING the short Stay we made here, the Sailors continually diverted themselves as long as their Money would hold out. The Day before we came away, some of those that were Ashore got drunk, particularly one, a Native of *Seville* about thirty five Years of Age, a very clever Fellow with large Whiskers which he curl'd every now and then, and took more care of than of all the rest of his Body. As drunk as he was, he came to the Long-Boat, and no sooner was aboard, but he fell fast asleep. His Companions that came after him, jogg'd him some on one Side, and some on another, and made a hundred Grimaces to excite him to laugh with them. A young *Portuguese* who was very near as drunk as he, being also desirous to try a Frolic, softly pull'd out his Scissors, and slily cut off the *Spaniard*'s Left Whisker. They all abhorr'd this Action, blam'd his Imprudence, and told him no Good would come of it. And the next Morning the *Spaniard* being told by some Babler who it was that had play'd him that scurvy Trick, he came to the Capstane where the other was helping to weigh the Anchor, and without speaking one Word to him run his Knife up to the very Hilt in his Breast. The *Portuguese* however had Strength to give the *Spaniard* such a curs'd Blow upon his Head with a Lever he held in his Hand, that he fell down stone-dead, and the *Portuguese* himself after a little staggering fell with his Nose against the Bridge of the Forecastle, where he lost almost all his

his Blood in the Space of a Quarter of an Hour, and gave up the Ghoſt in my Arms. Thus we loſt two brave Men at once, to the great Trouble of the Captain, who thereupon made an Oath that he would puniſh the firſt of his Men that he ſaw in Liquor in ſuch a Manner as to make him remember it. This however was no hinderance to our ſailing, ſo that we arriv'd happily at *Goa* the 13th Day of *April*, 1663.

THIS famous City is ſituated in an Iſland of the ſame Name, which is at leaſt fifteen Miles in compaſs at the Mouth of the River *Mondoui*. It has a good Harbour, a very famous Arſenal, and an incomparable Hoſpital. As I had no Engagement on board the Ship, the Captain had the Goodneſs to let me ſettle on that Iſland, and follow my Profeſſion there without demanding any thing for my Paſſage. Moſt of my Comrades alſo went Aſhore, ſome one Way, ſome another.

I WAS directed to an Inn where the Landlord was extremely civil. I had not been an Hour at his Houſe, but he was ſo complaiſant as to offer me Lodging there gratis, 'till I could find a Houſe to my Fancy. I made a hearty Supper, and went to Bed betimes. It was hot Weather, ſo that I laid myſelf down without any Thought near the Bed-Poſt, with my Left Arm hanging out of the Bed almoſt to the Ground. When I had been there at leaſt four Hours, and was in my firſt Sleep, ſomething ſoft and lukewarm which mov'd up and down upon my Hand, made me draw it up, but I was too drouſy to think what it might be. Falling into a Doze ſoon after, the ſame thing happen'd again and again, 'till being

being at last thoroughly awak'd, I was surpriz'd to see something walk thro' the Room which seem'd as big as a Calf. My Blood came into my Face, for I could not imagine what it was, and tho' I verily believ'd that all the Tales of Witches and Apparitions were old Women's Stories, and had fasten'd the Door of my Chamber, in which I knew not that there was another Bed besides mine, yet I then doubted of the Truth of my Hypothesis. In the mean time, this frightful Object after having taken some Turns about the Room, thought fit to return directly to me. Upon this I drew back, crept to one side as fast as it advanc'd to the other, and when I was almost out of Bed as I thought, my Horrour which was very great before, increas'd prodigiously when I found something stir behind me. To be plain, I was in a mortal Agony to see myself beset on all Sides. The Palpitation of my Heart was inconceivable, I could hardly fetch Breath, and was all over in a Sweat. In short, the very Moment that the one made as if he would throw himself upon me, I heard a Voice from the other saying, What's the matter, are not you well? At these Words I gave a dreadful Groan, which plainly shew'd the Fright that I was in. Don't be afraid, *reply'd he*, and who are you? *said I*, trembling all the while. I am *John*, said he, a Sailor on board the Ship that you came in. The D---l take you, *said I*, you have put a Trick upon me that surely will cost me my Life. I am half dead already, and if I han't Relief, 'tis impossible for me to recover. How the D---l came you hither? *continued I*, and who is there in the Chamber besides you? No Body,

Body, *said he*, and if you perceive any thing, it can only be the Captain's Dog, which follow'd me hither laſt Night. A Dog, *said I*, what, is it as big as an Aſs? 'Tis the great black Shock-Dog that you have ſeen a hundred times, *said he*, but Fear is apt to magnify Objects, and to be ſure he appear'd to you bigger than he is. 'Twas that curſed Cur then, *said I*, that came and lick'd my Hand three or four times before I was quite awake. But once more I pray, how came you into my Room? The Captain, *reply'd he*, went to ſup with a Friend where he detain'd me 'till ten o' Clock, and then bid me come and lie here this Night. When I came, the Inn-keeper ſaid he had no room for me, but that if I had come an Hour or two ſooner, I might perhaps have taken half a Bed with a Stranger who was juſt arriv'd in the *St. Jago*, and upon his explaining himſelf a little farther, I was ſure it muſt be you; ſo that after having told him that we both came in the ſame Ship, he permitted me upon my Word and Honour that you would not take it ill, to come and bear you Company. All this, my Friend, would have been perfectly right, *reply'd I*, if you had but ſpoke to me when you came into the Room. I would have done ſo, *ſaid he*, but you ſlept ſo ſound, that I thought it would be a Sin to diſturb you. Theſe Circumſtances reviv'd me very much, and I found my Spirits recover by degrees, but they had been too much diſorder'd for me not to guard againſt the Conſequence; therefore as ſoon as 'twas Day, I made my *Portugueſe* get out of Bed, and charg'd him to ſend for a Surgeon who breath'd a Vein, and took away five or ſix Ounces

ces of Blood, ſo that God be thank'd my Panic had no Conſequence, tho' certainly I never was in ſuch a Terror before. My Landlord, who ſcarce knew me again was affected at this Incident, but we laugh'd at it afterwards, and he diverted every one that came to his Houſe with the Story.

I LODG'D ten Days after over-againſt the Dominicans Convent here, which is a very fine one. Tho' I ſtay'd here but a very little time, I had the Happineſs to perform ſeveral Cures, which procur'd me the Acquaintance of many People of Worth. One of the Dominicans having broke his Leg by a Fall down Stairs, ſent for me, and tho' the Bone was ſhatter'd, yet I made ſuch a Cure of it, that at two Months end he walk'd as well as ever. This was of very great Service to me; for the honeſt Friar thought he could never do enough to ſhew his Love and Gratitude, and not only himſelf, but all of his Order were fond of my Company at all my leiſure Hours, and I us'd to entertain them with a Narrative of my Travels. Beſides, they recommended me where-ever they went, ſo that my Practice increas'd every Day, which brought me in a great deal of Money, and I thought myſelf in a fair Way of acquiring a conſiderable Eſtate. But Thanks to my unlucky Star, a freſh Affair happen'd which gave me a great deal of Trouble, and had like to have coſt me my Life.

THE Inhabitants of *Goa* are made up of all Religions, Pagans, Jews, Mahometans, but the Catholic is the prevailing Religion, and the only one that is publickly exercis'd. The Clergy are very rigid,

rigid, and the Laity extremely superstitious, but you must not think this proceeds from a Principle of Devotion, the former being stupidly ignorant, and the latter excessively debauch'd, the Women especially having the Character of inconceivable Lasciviousness. Being a little at Ease, and having an Opportunity to frequent several Companies, I often took the Liberty to banter those Eaters of Crucifixes and Swallowers of Images, who think they may with Impunity cut a Purse with one Hand as it were, provided they tell their Beads with the other. A Man of my Profession enrag'd to see how much Business I had, at the same time that he could hardly get Bread; having heard me talk after this manner several times, was such a Villain as to go and accuse me of Heresy before the Inquisition, which is the most terrible and the most unjust Tribunal in the World. For as I was going one Day to the Governor's, who had sent for me to bleed one of his Domestics, I was scarce fifty Paces from his House, but an Officer came and said I must go with him, and at the same Instant four of his Tipstaves surrounded me, and seizing me by the Collar carry'd me on the 26th of *June* 1669 to Prison, where they loaded me with Fetters like the vilest of Criminals.

THERE were above twenty of us in a curs'd Dungeon without Light. There was a deep Hole in the middle of it for the Prisoners Necessities, but scarce any Body durst go near it for fear of falling in, which was the Reason that every one dung'd where he could, and that consequently there was an intolerable Stench.

THE

THE firſt Day that I was detain'd, I did nothing but ſigh and groan for the Loſs of my Liberty, and with the Apprehenſion of what I was ſoon to ſuffer from the Tyranny of the moſt implacable Judges in the World. But being afterwards made ſenſible that all this would anſwer no End, I thought that the beſt way to diſpel part of my Chagrin would be to ſtart Converſation upon indifferent Matters with the firſt Man that came in my Way. For this end I addreſs'd myſelf to moſt of my Fellow-Priſoners, ſome of whom did not underſtand me, becauſe I did not ſpeak their Language, and the others were ſo dejected, that they did not care to anſwer me a Word; only one Man who was more patient and ſociable than the reſt, ſaid to me in *Portugueſe*;

"YOU have but a melancholy Reception "here, but you muſt not be ſurpriz'd at it, for 'tis "impoſſible without a happy Temper and a great "Courage not to be diſpirited in ſo diſagreeable "a Place as this, eſpecially when a Man has been "here ſome time. For my part, I thank God, I "am of an Age to bear a great deal, and am ſo "reſign'd to the Decrees of Providence, that I "laugh at all that Man can do to me." Thoſe are fine Qualities indeed, *ſaid I*, very few People are capable of ſo much Reſolution. Of what Religion are you, *ſaid I*? I am, ſaid he, *a Univerſaliſt*, or of the Religion of honeſt Men. I love God with all my Heart, I fear him, I worſhip him, and I endeavour to do to all Men without Exception what I wiſh they would do to me. All that's very good, *ſaid I*, but you are undoubtedly of ſome Communion. People ſeldom attain to your

your Age, but they declare for a certain Party or Sect. Not I, *ſaid he*, I make no difference between one Society or Denomination and another; there is not one but has its Beauties and its Blemiſhes, and I am perſuaded there is none in which a Man may not either be ſav'd or damn'd. Verily, *ſaid I*, what you ſay confirms me in the Opinion I have had a long Time, that there is not a greater Variety in Faces than there is in Sentiments. This is true, *reply'd he*, not only with regard to every Man in particular, but with Regard to every Day of one's Life; what we thought of Yeſterday in one Light, we look upon to-day in another, and the Mind as well as the Body is ſubject to a thouſand Alterations.

I AM a *Chineſe*, continued he, and my Father was a Man in good Circumſtances, who took great Care of my Education, ſo that it was not his Fault if I have not a good Stock of Learning. One *Du Bourg* a Miſſionary Jeſuit having heard mention of him as of a generous Man and of a numerous Family, found Ways and Means to introduce himſelf among us. He was a Man not only civil, but ſeemingly of an exemplary Piety, ſo that we all took an unſpeakable Pleaſure in hearing him diſcourſe. He gave each of us a Catechiſm, which he deſir'd us to read attentively, and explain'd in a very eaſy familiar Way. After this there were Conferences at our Houſe two or three times a Week, in which it muſt be own'd, that the Jeſuit neglected nothing for our Inſtruction. As there was little or no Perplexity in the Subjects which he treated of at firſt, ſuch as the Fall of Man, his Redemption by the Son of God, and ever-

everlasting Happiness, we took great Pleasure in his Lectures; but at last after two or three Months were over, this Ecclesiastic who went on gradually, and did not care to frighten us all at once, when he began to explain the Prophesies, and to display the Mysteries of the Trinity and the Incarnation, my Father's Mind began to be uneasy. He could not comprehend how Men of Sense that boast of the glorious Lights of Revelation should not see that their Worship is envelop'd in the thickest Darkness of Paganism. Is it not surprizing, *said he*, that People should take Pleasure in being wilfully blind to such a Degree, as to have an Abhorrence of those who shew them plainly, that their chief Maxims and the most essential Articles of their Religion are miserable Puerilities, and Impertinencies which they themselves say were a Stumbling-block to the *Jews*, and Foolishness to the *Greeks!* Especially, *said he*, I tremble when any Man goes to persuade me, that a Being sovereignly perfect and immaterial engender'd another corporeal God equal to him from all Eternity, and that there is also another God, an independent Spirit proceeding from the Father and the Son, each of the Three making a distinct Person, and being perfect God, and yet all those Three making but one only perfect God. Certainly this is making a strange Chimæra of the most simple, and most undivided Being.

THE Jesuit wish'd he had not embark'd so far. He endeavour'd to remove that Obstruction by the common Method of Theologues; but not succeeding, he made use of this Comparison. Suppose,

poſe, Sir, *ſaid he*, a Tree that bears Fruit inceſſantly; in ſuch a Tree I find three Things that have a very great Reſemblance to the Holy Trinity. I obſerve the Analogy between the Trunk and the Father, between the Son and the Branches, and between the Holy Spirit and the Fruit. The Trunk is as the Father, becauſe both the Branches and Fruit are produc'd from it; the Branches are as the Son, in that they are produc'd from the Trunk as ſo many Arms or Conveyance for diſtributing to Mankind all that proceeds from the Trunk. And the Fruit is as the Holy Spirit, conſidering that it comes to us both from the Trunk and the Branches, as ſo many Aſſurances or Teſtimonies of their Goodneſs. I own, that when Eternity is the Point in Queſtion, the Reſemblance ceaſes, becauſe 'tis not poſſible to find a Proportion betwixt Finite and Infinite, be the former ever ſo ancient and extenſive. Mean time, 'tis as true on the other hand, that when we examine the Kernels, or the Seeds of the Fruit of this Tree with a good Microſcope, we obſerve not only a Tree already form'd with its Branches, but the Fruit alſo, tho' a little confus'd; a true Emblem this of the Deity conſider'd during and before the Creation of the World, at which Time it appear'd but as one entire Tree without Diſtinction of Branches and of Fruit. But to come from hence to the Thing I aim at, 'tis evident that whatever Difference you make between the Trunk, Branches, and Fruits of a Tree, there is eſſentially none at all; they are indeed different Parts, yet all thoſe Parts together conſtitute but one Whole. It ſignifies nothing to ſay that the Trunk is not

the

the Branches, and that the Branches are not the Fruit. I affirm that this Diſtinction is not real, that is to ſay, that thoſe Things cannot ſubſiſt independently one of the other as when they are united. In order to make a compleat Tree ſuch as we have imagin'd, there muſt neceſſarily be a Conjunction of a Trunk, Branches, and Fruit, yet each has its particular Uſe; the firſt, as I ſaid before, creates or produces, the ſecond bears, diſplays, and gives, and the third by its Preſence and Operations confirms in the Belief we entertain with Regard to the ſecond and the firſt. 'Tis one and the ſame Subſtance variouſly repreſented, one Agent which operates after divers Manners, but in the main is only one, and cannot be conſider'd as ſeveral without a manifeſt Contradiction. God is but One in Eſſence: In the Oeconomy of Salvation he is conſider'd as the Author and Father of Mankind: In the Affair of Redemption he is look'd upon as an obedient ſubmiſſive and humble Son who ſatisfies the Juſtice of his Father; and when the Buſineſs is the Application and Diſtribution of his Grace, he is conſider'd as the Holy Ghoſt.

AFTER this Manner and no other, *ſaid my Father, interrupting him*, I conceive of the Meaning of the Word Trinity, but there is ſomething elſe couch'd under it, or you would not have made ſo many Periphraſes; I don't like any of theſe Ways of acting; formerly I thought you an honeſt Man, but now I find you a Cheat, and taking him by the Arm he thruſt him out of his Houſe for good and all; then turning about to us, *he ſaid*, Don't you obſerve the Abſurdities in this

this Sophister's Arguments? According to his Way of talking, this Jesus whom he preaches up to us so much, and whom he makes equal with God, had not so much Credit as to pay by his ignominious Death the Debt which the first Man contracted by eating the forbidden Fruit, because *Adam*, who, according to him, was created to live eternally, thereby deserv'd Death Temporal and Eternal, and because *Christ* only preserv'd *Adam*'s Posterity from the latter of those Deaths of which we have not any Certainty, and of which many Nations are ignorant; whereas he was not able to redeem us from the Death, which we know by Experience, and which, *said he*, was impos'd upon us as a Punishment. And what is yet more remarkable upon this Head is, that the Terms of this Redemption are burdensome, and much more difficult to put in practice, than those to which the *Jews* were subject under the old Dispensation. The *Israelites*, as the *Christians* themselves say, were only bound to do good Works; the Law requir'd nothing of 'em but Sprinklings and such other Ceremonies; but under the New Covenant Faith is added to good Works, and a Faith strong enough to believe all the Mysteries of Religion without doubting, notwithstanding they are repugnant to Reason and good Sense. As for my own Part, Children, *said he*, I renounce such wild Opinions, and will positively hear no more of them.

I was then twenty two Years of Age, and consequently at Years of Discretion: I could not for my Life see the Wildness of those Opinions which my Father cry'd out so much against. My Director (to do him justice) had only taught, that *Adam* was threatned with Temporal Death, if he transgress'd; and that the Design of *Christ*'s Sufferings was not to take this Penalty off from Mankind, but to make

them

them more than Amends by procuring for them Eternal Life in another World. To teach this, I thought, was not to repreſent *Chriſt* as wanting any Credit with God; unleſs it had been neceſſary to the Happineſs of Men that the Temporal Death ſhould have been ſuperſeded, the contrary of which ſeem'd more probable. I ſaw too that under the old Diſpenſation Faith was required of the *Jews*, as it is now under the Goſpel requir'd of *Chriſtians*. They were bound to believe not only that there is a God, but that *Moſes*'s Law was of Divine Origin, that he wrought Miracles, and that a *Meſſias* was to come. Theſe were ſome of their Articles of Faith; and tho' the Number of a Chriſtian's Articles is enlarg'd, yet none of thoſe which my Director had taught me, ſeem'd to my Reaſon to contain ſuch Propoſitions as a Divine Power did not reach to. However my Father's Temper was ſuch that he could not bear his Children to make him Replies, ſo that I was forc'd to obey, or run the Riſque of being chaſtis'd.

AFTER this, I did not ſee the Monk above three or four times in ſix Months, which was ſuch an inſupportable Mortification to me, that one Day having acquainted me of a Voyage he intended to make to *Goa*, I inform'd myſelf which Way he was to go, and without ſaying a Word to any Soul, I ſet out two Days before him, and went fifteen Leagues from Home to ſtay for him. The good Man was tranſported to ſee me, but when I told him what was the Motive of my meeting him, he had like to have diſcarded me for fear of the Conſequences, ſo that I was oblig'd to give him my Oath that I would, whereever we came, declare what indeed was no more than the Truth, that he had no hand in this Excurſion of mine, and that I would always endeavour

at

at the Hazard of my Life to clear him from any ſuch Accuſation.

WHEN we came hither, I intreated him to find me out ſome Perſon with whom I might live in the nature of a Domeſtic. It was not long before Father *Du Bourg* procur'd what I wanted, for he plac'd me with one *Pelciano* a *Portugueſe* Phyſician whom he knew intimately. This honeſt Man who had a great deal of Regard for me, took ſo much Pains to teach me his Language, that notwithſtanding my ordinary Avocations, I was able to ſpeak it in a very ſhort Time. He likewiſe took a ſingular Pleaſure in inſtructing me in his Religion, but tho' he was not ſo prevaricating as the Jeſuit, I was ſhock'd at a great many Things, which I thought either ridiculous, or manifeſtly contradictory. I was alſo at ſome Trouble to reconcile your Chronology, which limits the Creation of the World to the Term of about 6000 Years, with ours and that of the *Indians*, who extend it with a great deal of Probability to a Diſtance almoſt infinite. Beſides, I was extremely perplex'd which of the Sects to make choice of, when I heard that the Chriſtians as well as others, are divided into a Number of Societies which differ ſo much in their Opinions as to cauſe an irreconcileable Hatred between them, ſo far as to damn one another; and that even in every one of theſe Societies there's I know not how many different Sorts of Opinions. My Maſter to whom I propos'd my Scruples, and who made uſe of all his Rhetoric to ſolve them, expected I ſhould prefer the *Romiſh* Religion to all others, probably becauſe 'twas that which

which he profeſs'd himſelf. But being ſhock'd at the ridiculous Superſtitions which I found thoſe of that Communion were guilty of, I earneſtly begg'd him to tell me ſeriouſly what he thought it adviſeable for me to do.

WELL my Lad, *ſaid he*, remain as you are, or elſe turn to that Side where you think to find moſt Advantage. I will not make uſe of the Authority of *Polybius*, a very famous Hiſtorian about 200 Years before *Chriſt*, who pretended, as he ſays in his ſixth Chapter, " That the Gods, as " well as Puniſhments and Rewards after this Life, " are only the chimerical Productions of the An- " cients, which would be very inſignificant if a " Republic was to be form'd to conſiſt only of " good Men; but becauſe there is no State where " the People are not irregular and wicked, 'tis ab- " ſolutely neceſſary for keeping them in Awe, to " make uſe of the Panic Terrors of another " World, to admit, believe and intirely to con- " form to them, on Pain of paſſing for Madmen " and Fools." As this great Man was a Pagan, 'tis not fair to quote him among us upon a Fact of ſuch Conſequence. So that it ſhall ſuffice to tell you, that 'tis a Maxim with Great Men as well as the Learned to accommodate themſelves to Times and Seaſons. 'Tis indifferent in what Church, or with what People we worſhip God, provided we ſerve him with Reſpect and Veneration. He is the only common Father of all Mankind, and is willing to grant them all Salvation. 'Tis neither the Denomination of *Catholic*, *Calviniſt*, *Lutheran* nor *Anabaptiſt*, by which People are ſav'd, but by Faith and good Works. The

Man

Man that leads a good Life is acceptable to God, wherever he dwells, and Providence which trieth the Heart and the Reins, can eaſily diſtinguiſh a Believer from 100000 wicked and ungodly Perſons. Moſt of the Articles which ſet Men at Variance in Religion are not ſo eſſential as is pretended by the Clergy; 'tis often a Matter of Indifference whether they are accepted or rejected; and provided there are any of Conſequence, 'tis always certain that no Body knows our Hearts, and 'tis an eaſy Thing to aſſociate with Fools, and even to imitate their external Grimaces without embracing their ridiculous Opinions. Worſhip is not attach'd to any particular Place, nor is Adoration paid any longer on the Mountain or in *Jeruſalem*. God no longer requires the Blood of Heifers for his Satisfaction, nor the Diſtorſions of the Body. My Son, *ſays he*, give me thy Heart. This, *I ſaid*, appears to me very rational, I moſt humbly thank you for your Advice; and according to theſe Principles I ſhall be content with keeping up the Title of a Chriſtian, without attaching myſelf abſolutely to any one Sect. Ever ſince that Time, continued the *Chineſe*, while I travell'd with Monſ. *Pelciano*, I attended at all the Divine Services without any Scruple, and without giving Offence to any Perſon whatſoever.

BUT, *I reply'd*, how came you to be committed here? Indeed I know nothing of the Cauſe, *ſaid he*, unleſs it be for having perhaps ſpoke a little too freely of the Myſtery of the Incarnation; for I remember, I talk'd of that Matter publickly three or four Days before my Impriſonment. Mean time 'tis an Article that I ſhall never be ſilent

about; for tho' I call my ſelf a Chriſtian, and am really ſo, I am far from deſigning it to the Prejudice of the Author of all things. Jeſus Chriſt himſelf, if he were here, wou'd clear me. How great a Man ſoever this Divine Prophet was, 'tis ſufficient to believe him the Son of God, by way of Eminence, and 'tis affronting him, to think him capable of attributing that Title to himſelf by Nature. It may alſo be affirm'd that he is truly our Mediator, becauſe he has pointed out the way of Salvation to us, and the Means of keeping in that way. His Morals were undeniably pure, his Life holy, and his Doctrines divine, and he confirm'd the Truth of them by his Death; but that he is God Almighty, and Everlaſting, the ſame Eſſence as the Father, and yet perſonally diſtinct from him, and engender'd from all Eternity, conceiv'd immediately of the Holy Ghoſt, or of God himſelf, and born of an immaculate Virgin, is what he has not pretended to, tho' others, with the greateſt Injuſtice in the World, put thoſe Words into his Mouth. 'Tis very true, as I have heard my Maſter ſay an hundred times, that the Scripture introduces God ſaying to him, *Thou art my Son*, but then it adds immediately after, *This Day have I begotten thee.* And as to the Word Virgin, 'tis certain, that in the original Language it alſo ſignifies a young Woman. Beſides there are many Expoſitors who ſay, that the appropriating thoſe Paſſages to Jeſus Chriſt is doing Violence to the Text.

FINALLY, I muſt tell you, that the very Miracles, which are aſcrib'd to this Great Perſon, are not to be underſtood literally, but in an improper

proper and figurative Senſe, as all the Parables of the Goſpel are underſtood in. Thus, for Example, the Story of the Temptation, which appears to be ridiculous and impoſſible, if taken literally, means nothing but that the Kings and Princes of the Earth, who are as high as the Mountains above other Mortals, the Clergy, thoſe Directors of Conſciences, who preach in the Temples and ſacrifice at the Altars, are equally liable to Trials and Temptations with the poor illiterate people in the Deſerts, but that there is nothing which ought to divert them from their Duty, and to hinder them from paying their Homage to the Monarch of Heaven and Earth. The Perſons poſſeſs'd with Devils mean repenting Sinners, and the Swine, into which the Devils that poſſeſs'd them were ſent, ſignify Wretches abandon'd to all manner of Uncleanneſs, and plung'd over head and ears in Wickedneſs. The Faith of a Believer appears from the Example of *Peter*, when he walk'd upon the Waters, and his Unbelief from his ſinking; his Virtue from his reſolving to follow his Maſter in the moſt evident Dangers; and his Infirmity from his denying him the very Inſtant that a ſilly Woman accus'd him of being one of his Company when he fell into the Hands of his Enemies. In a word, all the extraordinary Events, as the Cure of Cripples, Blindneſs, Palſies, and ſuch other Ailments, as well as the Reſurrection of the Dead, mention'd in the Hiſtory of the Life of Chriſt, are to be underſtood in a ſpiritual Senſe; for then there is no Difficulty in explaining the Scripture, and they to whom it appears ridiculous or myſterious, will find it intel-

legible and eaſy; and ſo is the Old Teſtament, when we conſider it only as a Compound of Emblems, Allegories, Metaphors, Hyperboles, Types and Compariſons invented for the Comfort and Inſtruction of the Children of God.

WHAT you have now told me, *ſaid I*, would furniſh us Matter for a long Converſation, but I believe it would be to no Purpoſe. All that I can tell you is that the Jeſuit *Du Bourg* is a very Politick Gentleman, your Maſter a *Portugueſe Jew*, and for your own Part, I look upon you as a Volunteer, or a Free Perſon, and not as a liſted Soldier. As long as a Man is not engag'd to any particular Captain, he may go and ſerve where he pleaſes without any Body's calling him to Account; but from the Moment that he is inliſted, he cannot leave his Company without the Permiſſion of his Leader, and if he deſerts he is a Criminal, and is puniſh'd according to the Laws. You ſay you are a Chriſtian, tho' you are very far ſhort of it 'till you have abjur'd Paganiſm, and embrac'd the Sect that you like beſt among the Chriſtians. You are not properly ſpeaking ſubject to any Cenſure, and I perſuade myſelf that if they who detain you here knew you, you would not ſtay here long. When all's ſaid and done you are not under their Juriſdiction, and in this City there's entire Freedom for People of all Nations. Repreſent this to your Judge the next Time that you appear before him, not forgetting to ſay that you are a *Chineſe*; and if you don't make mention of Chriſtianity, I queſtion not but you will do very well, and that you will get off for a Correction which you have very well deſerv'd.

IF

IF ever I get out of their Clutches, *reply'd he*, I assure you I'll never get in again. I have, Thanks to God, wherewithal to live at Home, and can do very well after the manner I propose to myself, and even tho' our Domestic Affairs should not find me Employment, as long as my Father is living, I can spend my Time in making Telescopes and Microscopes.

HOW Microscopes, *said I*, where did you learn the Use of those Things? At Monsr. *Pelciano*'s, reply'd he, who is as well skill'd in them as any Man in all the *Indies*. Father *Du Bourg* meddles with them too, and even pretends to excel in them, but after all what he does that Way is worth nothing. The Microscopes which I make magnify Objects inconceivably. They make a Grain of Sand appear as big as an Ostrich's Egg, a Fly as large as an Elephant, and they help you plainly to distinguish Bodies which are imperceptible to the naked Eye. What I have admir'd a hundred Times is that by the help of this little Instrument, we find that our Bodies are cover'd with Scales one upon another like the Back of a Carp. And my Master lays it down for a Maxim that the Air we breathe is Water rarify'd, which only differs from that of Fish in Proportion as the Greater is to the Less; and I believe likewise that our Thick Air is compos'd of Particles much more gross in Proportion to the Subtle Matter, than those of Water can be. This Thought is founded upon Experiments which I have seen him make several Times, and which perhaps you will not be sorry to know.

HE took two Bottles, one full of Water in which he put ſome ſmall Fiſh; the other of Thick Air in which he put Birds, Mice, Rats, Squirrels, and other ſuch Animals, after which he pump'd the Air out of the one, and the Water out of the other. Then making an Obſervation with certain Glaſſes of a Figure in a manner Hyperbolical, it appear'd there was not ſo much difference between the Particles of the Water which went out of the one, and the Particles of Air that remain'd, as there was between the Particles of Air and the Parcels of pure Matter in the other; to which may be added that Fiſh live longer in the one than thoſe little Animals in the other. But Glaſſes of this Sort are of difficult Conſtruction, at leaſt I have not been able hitherto to make them to due Perfection. To this I have heard it objected that if you take three different Veſſels ſeal'd hermetically and fill'd, the firſt with Water, the ſecond with Air, and the third with ſubtile Matter, and put a live Sparrow in each; it was always obſerv'd that the Fleſh of this Animal was corrupted in a few Days in the firſt Veſſel, whereas in the others it did not ſuffer the leaſt Alteration in ſeveral Years. From hence it ſeems to follow that the Particles of Water muſt be more groſs and more efficacious than thoſe of Air, becauſe otherwiſe this would proceed by degrees; that is to ſay, that if the Water corrupts Fleſh in eight Days, the Air muſt do it in ſixteen, and the ſubtile Matter in twenty four, ſuppoſing an Equality in their Differences, whereas 'tis found that Water alone is capable of this Operation. But 'tis probable that the Greatneſs of the Parts has not ſo much Share in this

this Diſſolution as the Figure and Agitation in the Agent on the one hand, and the Diſpoſal of thoſe ſame Parts in the Patient on the other, becauſe there are Bodies, ſuch as Oak-timber, which keep much longer in Water than the Air; whereas, on the contrary, Fire deſtroys Aſh-wood in a Day, when Water cou'd not do it in an Age.

'TIS a curious Subject, *reply'd I*, but do you know what your Doctor thinks about the Production of Animals? He thinks, ſaid he, that Generation is the only way by which they are produc'd, whatever Argument may be invented to favour a contrary Opinion. For as to the Inſtance of Fruits with Worms in them, whereof there's no Appearance without which way they got within, this is attended with no Difficulty. To explain this matter it muſt be obſerv'd, that Flies and ſuch Inſects commonly creep into the Chinks of Trees and Plants, not only to ſhelter themſelves from the Injuries of the Air, but to get Nouriſhment from the Sap; ſo that if the Eggs of ſuch Vermin happen to be in the Place where Fruit is to be form'd, that which is neareſt being encompaſs'd with the firſt Drop of the Moiſture that iſſues out of it for its Formation, lies inclos'd in it, and lives in it till the Fruit is ripe, or as long as there remains any thing for it to ſubſiſt on; and when ſuch Proviſion is ſpent, it penetrates thro' the Obſtacle that ſtops it, and makes its way out. To confirm this Opinion by undeniable Proof, only look upon the Gall-nut, and if you examine its Production carefully, you will find ſomething in it that is ſurprizing.

THE Gall-nut is an Excrement, or, if you pleaſe, *ſaid he*, a ſort of little Apples that grow in the Leaves of Oaks, after this manner: There are certain black Flies, which in the Seaſon lay their delicate Eggs on the lower ſide of the Leaves of thoſe great Trees, for fear they ſhould be ſcorch'd by the Heat of the Sun: As ſoon as theſe little Animals are hatch'd, they break thro' the Covering which gives them Shade, and pierce thro' the Veins of it, in order to be nouriſh'd by the Juice that comes out of it in a great Quantity. If it then happens that one of theſe Inſects be environ'd with a Drop that has any due Conſiſtency, it ſtays there while ſuch Drop congeals, grows and becomes a Fruit at laſt, of the Bigneſs of a Pigeon's Egg, more or leſs, and it does not go out of it till 'tis become a Fly, or till the Fruit which it has in a manner produc'd, be too dry to give it Nouriſhment. He confirm'd this Hypotheſis by other Arguments which I don't remember.

THREE Weeks after my Impriſonment I was carry'd to the Holy Office: The Judge having ask'd me the Place of my Birth, my Age and my Religion (to which I anſwer'd very readily) conjur'd me to declare with my own Mouth the Reaſon of my being detain'd, becauſe there was no better Method for my ſpeedy Deliverance out of Trouble, expecting, no doubt, that I ſhould act with regard to that Tribunal, as I wou'd before God, that is to ſay, make Confeſſion of my Faults, in order to obtain Mercy. I proteſted to him, that I had not done or ſaid any thing which I cou'd reproach my ſelf with, or which any body cou'd law-

lawfully lay to my Charge; that God was Witneſs of my Innocence, and that it muſt be ſome ill-minded Perſon, who perhaps envy'd my Succeſs in my Buſineſs, that had done me the Miſchief to accuſe me of ſome Crime that I had never committed. In fine, I gave him to underſtand, that I had great Dependance upon his Goodneſs, and that if he did but inquire into my Life he wou'd ſoon be convinc'd of the Truth of what I told him.

THE ſame thing happened to me a fortnight after, and ſo on till I had been examin'd ſeven times; after which the Inquiſitor told me, that ſince I did not care to make a true Confeſſion of the Crimes I had committed, as a means of recovering my Liberty, they ſhould proceed to declare againſt me. At the ſame time the Secretary read the Depoſitions, which ſet forth that I had ſpoke contemptibly of the Images of Saints, Crucifixes, Purgatory, and the Infallibility of the Holy Office. What ſay you to that? *ſaid the Judge.* I own, *ſaid I*, that when I beheld the Irregularity of moſt of the Inhabitants of this City, I could not help declaring in ſeveral Places, that I was ſurpriz'd to ſee, that People, who ſcrupled to paſs before a Crucifix often made of vile Stuff, without paying a profound Reverence to it, or were afraid to neglect one Day without falling down twenty times before Images of Paper, made no Scruple to wallow in the Ordure of the moſt infamous Vices that can be committed in a Society of reaſonable Creatures. 'Tis alſo true, that I ſpoke of Purgatory, as a Place which I thought very unneceſſary, becauſe 'tis ſufficient for a Chriſtian to believe

that his Saviour's Blood cleanseth him from all his Sins. And as to Infallibility, said I, I don't think it can be lawfully ascrib'd to any but God, all Men being Sinners, according to several plain Passages of the holy Scripture. I own, *said I*, that I talk'd after this manner, but God knows that 'twas only with a View to glorify his Name, and from the Abhorrence I had to see so much Licentiousness in a Place where Piety and Devotion are pretended to reign in a very eminent Degree, and not with any Design to offend Religion or the holy Office. You took too great a Liberty, Friend, reply'd the Inquisitor; if you had however confess'd all this at first, it wou'd not have been the worse for you, tho' your Guilt wou'd have been the same. Mean time the Secretary, who wrote down my Confession in the Nature of a formal Deposition, order'd me to sign it, whereupon a Process was commenc'd against me; I was condemn'd to the Gallies for Life, and all my Goods confiscated.

We were about an hundred and fifty poor Wretches, who, on the 8th of *January*, 1670. were turn'd out of this terrible Place, some to be banish'd, of whom our *Chinese* was one, some to be whipp'd, and three, who had been accus'd of Magic, were burnt alive, particularly a poor old Man of fourscore and three, whom two different Orders of Monks had depriv'd of a very considerable Inheritance, by forcing his Brother, who was a rich Man, to make a Will, by which they got Possession of all that he left behind him at his Death, on pretence of delivering his Soul forthwith out of Purgatory.

gatory. This unjuſt Proceeding ſo exaſperated the old Man, that he cou'd not help fretting at it, and raving againſt thoſe Perſons whom he took to be the Authors of this Injuſtice, whereupon they loaded him with Crimes that deſerv'd Burning, and did not ceaſe to proſecute him till they ſaw him conſum'd to Aſhes.

CHAP. XV.

Of the Author's Departure for Lisbon: *How he was taken and carry'd into Slavery, and what happened to him while he was a Slave.*

I WAS carry'd aboard a Ship, the Captain of which had Orders to deliver me over to the Inquiſitor at *Lisbon*; ſo that we ſet out that ſame Month for *Portugal*. I was told by the way, that the Galleys, to which I was condemn'd, were only Houſes of Correction, where the Priſoners were put to hard Labour, becauſe the *Portugueſe* have no Galleys at Sea. This comforted me a little in my Misfortune. I thought it a great Happineſs to be deliver'd from the Oar, and the Cruelties exercis'd by the Tyrants of the Committees upon the Slaves chain'd on board their Veſſels. We had a tolerable Voyage, and the fineſt Weather all the way that we could reaſonably expect. The moſt remarkable thing that happen'd to us was,

that

that on the 23d of *March* a Water-ſpout had like to have carry'd off our Main-topmaſt. The Crew thought themſelves loſt, and in a Moment the moſt impious Expreſſions were chang'd into thoſe of Devotion, which continu'd till the Hurricane left us. At length, after having paſs'd the *Canaries* a long time, and being arriv'd, as I thought, at N. Lat. 34. two Pirates came up with us one Morning at Day-break, which fell to cannonading us ſtoutly. Tho' we had made a good Voyage, yet there were ſeveral ſick People on board of us; we fought however near two Hours, during which we had twelve Men kill'd, and ſeventeen wounded. I beg Pardon of God, but I muſt own I was glad that we were fallen into the Hands of Pirates, becauſe I thereby hoped to recover my Liberty; but it did not turn out as I expected. The Captain redeem'd his Ship for a Sum of Money, and the Pirates only took thirty of the ſtouteſt and cleverest Men, beſides my ſelf, whom they carry'd to *Serſelli*, a little Town upon the *Mediterranean*, twenty Leagues from *Algier*, and four from the River *Miromus*. There we landed on the 18th of *July*, and were ſold to the higheſt Bidder.

My Maſter was a Ship-carpenter, a Man of Subſtance, who had at leaſt thirty Boys in his Service. At firſt I was only employ'd in the coarſe Work; to fetch and carry, and to ſerve the Workmen with what they wanted, was my proper Occupation. Afterwards I helped to careen the Ships, to refit them, and to calk them. There was a vaſt difference betwixt my Condition of Life now,

now, and that I was in at *Goa* before I was detain'd there; yet when I remember'd what I had ſuffer'd in the Inquiſition, and what was preparing for me at *Lisbon*, I thought my ſelf extremely happy. In ſhort, I had a Maſter that was perfectly honeſt, who ſeeing that I did my beſt, did not let me want for Neceſſaries. The Lodging was good, the Proviſions better, and he never gave me an angry Word. This made me an hundred times call to mind the Idea that us'd to be given of the *Barbarians* and *Turks* among us Children. They were repreſented to us as Devils; but I muſt ſay it to their Commendation, that I found as much Charity, Humanity, and Honeſty among them as among the *Europeans*; nay, more, if I may preſume to ſay ſo, inſomuch that I ſhould not have beeen ſorry if it had been my Hap to have ended my Days among them; but Providence was pleas'd to diſpoſe of me otherwiſe; and the Methods it made uſe of to bring me out of that Country are pretty remarkable.

AS there is nothing perfect in this World, *Schilt*, the Head Footman, who was a Renegado and a Native of *Vienna*, hated me as much as my Patron lov'd me. There was no ill Office which the Traitor did not do me when he had an Opportunity to ſalve Appearances; ſo that my Maſter, who plainly ſaw where the Fault lay, but could not poſſibly do without him, was forc'd againſt the Grain to part with me: I was ſold to a wealthy Nobleman, who liv'd in the Country about three Leagues off from the Place where I was.

THIS

THIS Nobleman had a Son of twenty seven or twenty eight Years of Age, who was a Fool, and sometimes quite mad. He had lucid Intervals of Reason, but at other times he rent his Clothes, broke his Chain sometimes, and would have been likely to have torn those in pieces who came in his reach, or to have kill'd himself if he had not been prevented. An Amour was the Cause of this Frenzy. He had courted a Girl, who wou'd not have him, upon which he mop'd at first, and at last his Head turn'd. There was a Necessity for some body to be near the poor Wretch Day and Night, and they were willing to have a Man of a proper Age, Wisdom, and Strength to watch over his Actions. I had sufficiently of the first, and was not entirely destitute of the others: And I can say, that I manag'd it so as was very pleasing to my Superiors. He had not been six Weeks under my Care, but I did what I wou'd with him, except when he fell into a Passion, and then he car'd for no body, and all that could be done with him, was to keep him fast bound, and to let nothing come in his way that he could do any Damage to.

THIS House or rather this stately Palace, was a Place of Resort for all the Gentlemen thereabouts, and Foreigners were there eternally. One Day a Bashaw arriv'd there, who was receiv'd with very particular Tokens of Esteem and Respect. They lodg'd him in a very magnificent Room, which look'd into the inner Court; but towards Midnight the Gentleman was awak'd by a prodigious Rattle in his Chamber, which, for all he was a Bashaw, frighted,

frighted him, ſo that he lifted up his Head, look'd firſt one way, then another, and at laſt ſpy'd at one End of the Hall a Creature lying upon a piece of *Turky*-wrought Tapiſtry, which he could not tell what to make of. He was upon the point of riſing out of his Bed, and going near to examine it, or of calling out to ſome body elſe to come to it, but while he was heſitating which to do, the Object on which he had fix'd his Eyes roſe up on a ſudden, advanc'd towards his Tent, dragging a huge Chain after him, and in very tatter'd Clothes, with a Beard that cover'd half of his Face, and bare-headed, ſo that he look'd more like a Devil than a Man. At this Spectacle he was ſtruck all of a Heap: But this was not all; for the Spectre not only walk'd twenty times round the Room, but came to the Baſhaw's Bed-ſide, and lay down by him for half an hour, without doing or ſaying any thing, and then getting up again, march-ed out, pulling the Door after him very hard. When the Morning came my Patron was ſurpriz'd that he had not ſeen his Gueſt; for Breakfaſt had been ready a long time, and they had promis'd one another to walk out in the Morning to get them a Stomach. At laſt, about eleven o' Clock he ſent a Domeſtic, and bid him ſteal in ſoftly, to ſee if he was aſleep. The Man opening the Door, and creeping into the Room, advanc'd gradually to the Bed-ſide, and ſaw the poor Baſhaw ſtaring with his Eyes wide open, but pale as Death, with all the other Symptoms of a man that had ſcarce any Life left within him. The Servant return'd as ſoftly as he enter'd, made but

one

one Leap to his Master, and told him what he had seen. Upon this the whole House was in an Alarm; they all ran to see him; they spoke to him, ask'd him what was the Matter, but he spoke not a Word, so that every body believ'd he was at the point of Death. Mean time some body having thought fit to put a Drop of Spirit of Wine into the Palms of his Hands, and to rub the same on his Temples, and under his Nostrils, they began to observe that he came to himself. A little after they forc'd him to take a little Brandy into his Mouth, which did him a great deal of Good; he recover'd his Spirits by degrees, and giving a deep Groan, O Heavens! said he, what a terrible Night have I had! I am not much oblig'd to you, Sir, *said he*, speaking to my Master, for putting me in a Place where Witches have their nocturnal Meeting. What means all this, reply'd my Master? Have you had any troublesome Dreams? we drank a little hard last Night, which perhaps you are not us'd to, so that this may have disturb'd your Brain, and started disagreeable Objects to your Fancy: But come, get up, it will signify nothing, only be of Courage, a good Dinner will set all to Rights. You must not, reply'd he, lay the Blame either on the Wine or on my Brain; 'twas no Imagination nor Dream, I assure you I was in my right Senses when the Devil appear'd to me. He stay'd about two Hours in my Room, and actually lay some time upon my Bed. But, Sir, said my Master, who began to smell a Rat, what Shape did the Devil assume? He appear'd in the Shape of a Man, reply'd the Bashaw, and notwithstanding the little Light that glimmer'd in at the Windows, I observ'd

obſerv'd, that he was all over ragged, that he had a ſorrowful Countenance, thin Jaws, *&c.* Don't ſay a Word more, ſaid my Patron, interrupting him, I am troubled at this Accident. I am ſorry to ſay it, but I muſt tell you, that the Man you ſaw is my Son; and having given Orders that he ſhou'd be brought, the Baſhaw was in amaze the very Moment he ſaw him. I can't deny, ſaid he, but that's the very Man I ſaw laſt Night, who put my Brains ſo much upon the Rack. He talk'd in ſuch a manner as made the Fool almoſt burſt with Laughter, and gave him an Opportunity to tell him with his own Mouth the Prank that he had play'd. This anger'd the Baſhaw, ſo that he ask'd if no body was appointed to look after him, and ſome body anſwering in the Affirmative, he deſir'd to ſee him. Immediately I was ſent for, and when I came before him, Is it you, *ſaid he*, you Dog, that is ſet over this young Gentleman to take care of him? Yes, Sir, *ſaid I.* And what's the Reaſon then that you let him looſe laſt Night? *reply'd he.* He was not ty'd, *ſaid I.* He had been well for ſome Days paſt, ſo that I have not kept ſo ſtrict a Watch upon him as uſual, but have ventur'd to take my Reſt by him. During this he made an Excurſion, and came to alarm you, as I am told, at which I am really concern'd to the laſt degree, and I ask your Pardon, promiſing you it ſhall be ſo no more. No more, you curſed Dog, *reply'd he*, I believe it won't, at leaſt with reſpect to me, for I ſhall never recover it. I have a great Reſpect for thoſe that you belong to; but 'tis well for you that I am not able to riſe; for perhaps I ſhould have been very outragious, and

and you might have run the risque to have had your Head broke. Get out of my Sight, you Wretch, and pray to God, that I may not happen to meet you. Then addressing his Speech to my Master, If you would oblige me, Sir, said he, you will dismiss this Scoundrel upon the Spot, that I mayn't hear his Name mention'd any more. I had not been many Months in this Castle, during which the other Domestics did not owe me any Grudges, and my Master had a very great Respect for me, because of the Care I took of his Son, who really gave me a great deal of Trouble. Yet for all this the good Man was oblig'd in Complaisance to turn me away.

I was carry'd into the City to be sold to the first Bidder; there I learnt that the head Footman I mention'd ere now was dead, so that I sent to ask my old Master, or Patron, whether he wou'd please to admit me into his Service. He was over-joy'd to have me again, and I as glad to live again with a Person who had all the Regard imaginable for me while I dwelt with him. About three Weeks after, Monsieur the *Bashaw*, accompany'd with a fine Retinue came to see our Yard. I knew him when he was a hundred Paces off. His Threats had made such an Impression on my Mind, that I ran away with all the speed I cou'd. He did not know it was I, because the next Day, after the Vision, when he was recover'd of the Fright and his Passion entirely over, he ask'd what was become of me; and when he was told that I was gone, he seem'd to be sorry at it, order'd me to be sent for immediately, because he desir'd to speak with me, with an Assurance

ſurance upon his Word and Honour that he wou'd not hurt a Hair of my Head. Notwithſtanding this, I trembled when I went to him, which he obſerv'd and burſt out into Laughter, which he did no doubt to hearten me. He ask'd me ſeveral indifferent Queſtions, to which I anſwer'd with all the Submiſſion poſſible. At length he ask'd me, whether, in caſe my preſent Maſter was willing to part with me, I ſhou'd not be very glad to return and live with the Gentleman whoſe Service I had ſo lately quitted upon his Account? Having made him ſenſible that I cou'd not act as I pleas'd in that Affair, I cou'd make him no Anſwer but that I was perfectly well where I was. Keep then in that Mind, ſaid he, 'tis to be ſure as agreeable to be in the Company of People of Senſe, as to be eternally taking care of a Lunatic; and having given me Money to drink his Health, he ſent me abou my Buſineſs.

THIS little Adventure was not the only one that happen'd to me during my Slavery, but the others were of ſuch ſmall Moment that I paſs them over in Silence. As to the Diſputes to which I was often ſubject, ſo far as to be oblig'd ſometimes to proceed to Blows, the Detail of them wou'd take up too much of the Readers Time and Patience. The *Turks* are generally ignorant, and I cou'd hear nothing from 'em but cold Railleries againſt our crucify'd Jeſus, which I bore with Patience; becauſe on the one hand, they don't believe in Chriſt; and on the other, they were upon their own Ground, and I had no Protection to hope for from any Body. But I had

had much ado to contain my ſelf when I was attack'd by Chriſtian Renegadoes.

AMONG others there was a *Gaſcon* Diſputant, who was really the boldeſt Atheiſt or Deiſt that I ever ſaw. He was perfectly good-natur'd; but when he was in a rallying Mood, he turn'd every thing into Ridicule, and confounded our greateſt Myſteries with the Whimſies of the *Jewiſh* Talmud and the Legends of the *Romiſh* Church. My Father, ſaid he, was aſſaſſinated one Day as he was going in Pilgrimage to our Lady of *Loretto*: A fine Reward this for ſo good a Catholick as he was! My Mother who profeſſed the *Romiſh* Religion was dragoon'd and murder'd for her obſtinate Diſobedience to the Orders of the Court. And I my ſelf in my Voyage from *France* to *Holland*, was taken by Pirates, ſo that in avoiding Perſecution I fell into Slavery.

AS I found him a young Man not only of great Wit and Learning, but alſo of a vaſt deal of Good-nature, (for all that knew him there mightily extoll'd his beneficent and friendly Temper) I very much pity'd him, and endeavour'd ſeveral times to reclaim him from his dangerous Sentiments with reſpect to Religion. We had frequent Converſations upon that Head, and I had great Hopes that in time I might be able to ſet him in the right Road of Truth; but an unhappy Accident ſhorten'd his Days before Heaven permitted me to perfect this charitable Work. It wou'd be too tedious to mention all the Diſputes we had together, ſo that I ſhall but juſt glance over ſome of the chief Points.

WHEN

WHEN I reproach'd him with changing his Religion and profeſſing the Mahometan, which by the way he did not believe a tittle of, he made me Anſwer that after a due Examination of the ſeveral Religions that had come to his Knowledge, he found nothing in any one of 'em that cou'd ſatisfy a rational Man, and that therefore he ſaw nothing which ought to hinder a wiſe Man from conforming at leaſt externally to the prevailing Religion of the Country where he dwells, juſt as People accuſtom themſelves to the Habits and Manners of a Country for fear of being thought ridiculous by appearing ſingular. And becauſe I am like to gain more Confidence and Eſteem among the People of this Country by conforming to their way of Worſhip, I ſhou'd be a great Simpleton, ſaid he, if I depriv'd my ſelf of that Advantage by a ſilly Attachment to another, which is a hundred times more impertinent and abſurd. I anſwer'd him, that I was extremely ſurpriz'd to hear a Man talk at that rate who had been educated in the Chriſtian Religion, and by his Profeſſion ought to know it the better for having throughly ſtudy'd it. 'Tis for that very reaſon, reply'd he, my Friend, that I ſpeak thus of it, becauſe I have well examin'd it and have diſcover'd its Folly and Ridicule. But tho' you are ſo old, 'tis probable you have not yet ſhaken off the Yoke of the Prejudices of Education, and that you implicitly adhere to what you learnt from your Nurſe or your Chaplain without farther Inquiry. I told him, that I had travell'd and ſeen more of the World than he thought, and that I had heard the Arguments of

People

People of various Sentiments in the Article of Religion, but that I had never met with any Syſtem which was ſo worthy of God, ſo agreeable to Man, and which had ſo many Marks of Truth as the Chriſtian Religion. That my Profeſſion had not permitted me in my Youth to ſtudy religious Controverſies ſo throughly as he had, but that nevertheleſs, I wou'd undertake to defend againſt all his Attacks the principal Truths of Chriſtian Religion; as the Exiſtence of a God; the Creation of the World; the Immortality of the Soul; the Fall of Man; the Redemption of Mankind by Jeſus Chriſt; the Truth and Divinity of the ſacred Scriptures, on which all the reſt is founded; and the Neceſſity ——

Hold, ſaid he, there's enough, and if you can defend thoſe Articles, I'll agree to any that you ſhall pleaſe to add. We will begin at the laſt, if you pleaſe, and ſo go back to the firſt. You know very well, ſaid he, that Chriſtians are not all of one Opinion with regard to the Inſpiration of the Holy Scriptures. Some think the whole inſpir'd even to the leaſt Word; others reject this Opinion, and only maintain in the general, that with regard to the Matter, the Holy Spirit ſo far guided the Writers of thoſe ſacred Books, that they cou'd not commit any Error in the Facts which they relate, nor in the Doctrine which they teach. Pray tell me which of theſe two Opinions you pretend to embrace?

I am not for the firſt, ſaid I, and I think a Man muſt be quite void of Senſe to maintain it, if he has read the holy Books with ever ſo little Attention. But as to the latter, it is ſupported by

by convincing Arguments. Not to insist upon the great Antiquity of the first Books of the Holy Scripture, which you will own to me, however, to be the oldest Monuments in the World, and which were written before the Art of Writing was known to other Nations; the marvellous Things which are contain'd in those Scriptures, the Miracles which God wrought to confirm the Revelation, and the Predictions of the holy Prophets of which we have seen a great part accomplish'd, and wait for the fulfilling of the rest, are Things which surpass all that Man can do, and which none but God can be the Author of.

YOU are in the right, said he, not to insist upon the Antiquity of your sacred Books, because it wou'd not be of any Advantage to you. For a Romance, or an Imposture, may be as ancient and more ancient than a true History, this is nothing to the purpose. Nevertheless, I am very far from admitting those Books to be so old as you pretend, and I defy you or any body, to prove that any of those Books was in being before the time of *Esdras*, that is to say, above a thousand Years after *Moses*, who according to you wrote the first Books. And if we attentively read the Books ascrib'd to *Moses*, we shall find a great many Passages which shew that they were written long after his Time. He quoted several which I pass over in Silence to avoid being tedious. Then as to your Argument, said he, which is founded upon the miraculous Things contain'd in the Scriptures, I draw a Conclusion from it quite contrary to yours. For the more a Book contains of what is marvellous and extraordinary,

traordinary, the more 'tis liable to Suſpicion. This is the Suppoſition you your ſelf wou'd form of any other Book, and if you don't think ſo of this, 'tis only the Effect of your Prepoſſeſſion which is very palpable, becauſe it inclines you to admit ſuch Evidence to prove the Truth of a Book as wou'd, if you were not prejudic'd in your Judgment, ſerve for the effectual Deſtruction of its Credit. As to the Miracles you talk of, they are only written in that Book of which you wou'd have them brought as Proofs, and therefore, as I have already ſaid, they muſt tend rather to explode it. Every indifferent unprejudic'd Perſon receives a Relation or Hiſtory of paſt Tranſactions only according to the Degrees of Probability with which it is attended, and judges it to be falſe or romantick by the marvellous or extraordinary Facts which it contains; for Nature was always the ſame at all times, and Truth was ever plain and natural. As to the Propheſies you mention'd, all the Accompliſhments which are related in the ſame Book with the Predictions, prove nothing but that they are part of the ſame Romance, and were forg'd at the ſame time; and as for thoſe which are pretended to have happen'd ſince, the Events have ſo little Connection with the Predictions of which they are conſtrued to be the Accompliſhment, that nothing but the Force of Prejudice can diſcover their Conformity. He quoted a great number of Inſtances to me to ſupport what he had ſaid, but I chooſe not to mention them here.

MOREOVER, ſaid he, if you were well acquainted with the Hiſtory of the Canon of thoſe ſacred

ſacred Writings, not only of the Old Teſtament which you derive from the *Jews*, an ignorant ſuperſtitious People as ever liv'd, who were not agreed neither as to the Truth and Authority of every part of it, but alſo of the New Teſtament as it is now admitted among the generality of Chriſtians, you wou'd find ſo much Ignorance, Superſtition, Uncertainty and Perplexity in it, that you your ſelf wou'd be aſham'd of it. Thereupon he enter'd into the Hiſtory of the Canon, and of the Manner how, and Time when it was form'd; and he talk'd to me of the Factions and Diſputes among the Members of the Council of *Laodicea*, and ſome others, with regard to the ſeveral Goſpels, Acts, Epiſtles, *&c.* which the ſeveral Churches or Societies of Chriſtians had receiv'd for true, excluſive of others; of the Difficulties and Perplexities on that Head, and how ſome rejected what others receiv'd, together with the Reaſons urg'd on both ſides, inſomuch that I was aſtoniſh'd to find what a Treaſure of curious Things he had ſtor'd up in his Memory.

I reply'd, That *Moſes* was in poſſeſſion of the Credit of having written the *Pentateuch*, and that to deſtroy this there muſt be Proofs brought, not meer Aſſertions. I put him in mind that *Ezra* (whom he ſeem'd to think the Author of it) was not able, if we may judge by that undoubted Piece of His, to have compos'd what paſſes under *Moſes*'s Name: and that, if he were able, yet it was next to impoſſible for Him to have made the whole *Jewiſh* Nation believe (as they appear conſtantly to have done) that what he wrote, had been in being all along before the Captivity. I ſaid that the miraculous Facts recorded in them did not, in my

Judgment, take off from their Probability, becauſe they are all aſcribed to a Divine Power, and are mention'd as ſerving ſome great End and Purpoſe: and that as to the Propheſies, ſome of thoſe in *Iſaiah* and *Daniel* are ſo viſibly connected with the Accompliſhment in *Jeſus*, that a Man muſt be blind (I thought) not to diſcover their Conformity. I was going on to defend the Authority of the Books of the New Teſtament, and began to obſerve, That, notwithſtanding any Diſputes in the Council of *Laodicea*, or any other Council, yet from the Beginning ſome of our Goſpels and Epiſtles had been receiv'd as of Divine Authority; and that Chriſtianity, as to the main of it, would ſtand firm, if all the Pieces which had ever been doubted of by any Number of Chriſtians, were thrown quite out of the Inquiry.

UPON this he turn'd the Diſcourſe, and ſaid, What Notion can you have of God, who according to you is the Sovereign Lord of the whole Univerſe, and can diſpoſe of all its Parts as he pleaſeth; if you believe that in order to explain his Will to Mankind, he was under a Neceſſity of imploying obſcure, ignorant, or enthuſiaſtical Perſons to write Books, or propheſy, or preach in a remote Corner of the Earth, and to a Herd of ignorant People, without making it known to the learned and polite Nations? Do you think that was the right Method to make all Mankind ſenſible of ſo neceſſary a Thing as the Will of God? Has not he who created and diſpos'd of every thing according to his good Pleaſure, and without any Poſſibility of being hinder'd in it, has he not put all Things in the Condition he at firſt deſign'd them? And is not

that

that his Will which we call the Order, Courſe, or Voice of Nature? To ſuppoſe any other particular Will in that infinitely perfect Being, is to ſuppoſe Alteration and Imperfection which is contrary to his Nature. And to imagine that he communicates to ſome Perſons, and conceals from many others the Rules to which he wou'd have all Men conform, is to ſuppoſe him guilty of an unjuſt Partiality unworthy of his divine Nature. Therefore it may ſurely be concluded, that whatever is call'd divine Revelation in one Country or another, is really nothing but an Impoſture founded upon the Weakneſs of Mankind in general, and invented by ſuch as ſeek to impoſe upon them from certain Views and Deſigns.

I made him anſwer, that if Man had continued in that State of Perfection wherein the Creator at firſt plac'd him, he wou'd not perhaps have needed a Revelation to ſerve as a Rule to his Actions, but ſince he loſt that Happineſs by his Fault, he is ſo corrupted and ſo prone to Wickedneſs, that he not only requires Revelation, but the ſpecial Grace of his Creator for—

HOLD there, ſaid he, I find you are going to tell me of the Fall of Man and all its Conſequences, ſuch as the Corruption of his Nature, Original Sin, the Redemption of Mankind, *&c.* This, if you pleaſe, ſhall be the Subject of our Converſation for the remainder of this Evening. Your Divines, ſaid he, are much in the right to call thoſe Myſteries the ſtumbling Block of humane Reaſon, for ſurely they are incomprehenſible by Reaſon and good Senſe. But before I

enter into the particular Examination of theſe Articles, give me Leave to entertain you with a Fable which I had from an *Arabian* Philoſopher, who had been a great Traveller, and ſaid he made it to give his Friends an Idea of the Mythology of a certain Nation that he had ſeen.

The Fable of the BEES.

THERE was formerly, ſaid he, a great and potent King, Sovereign of one of the Iſlands in the Ocean, whoſe Power was ſuch that no other King equall'd it, and all his Subjects were ſo ſubmiſſive to him that they did whatever he requir'd, and his Will was ſo far the Rule of all their Actions that they cou'd not do otherwiſe. His Goodneſs was as great as his Power, and his Wiſdom as great as both. In a word, he poſſeſs'd all Perfections in the higheſt Degree. This King found the ſaid Iſland Deſert, but he planted it, fill'd it with Inhabitants and Animals of all ſorts, and caus'd it to be cultivated, ſo that it produc'd all Neceſſaries not only for the Suſtenance, but for the Covenience and Pleaſure of all the Inhabitants.

THE King's Palace was the greateſt and moſt magnificent that can be imagin'd, and ſituate in the middle of the fineſt Gardens that were ever ſeen. This Monarch who perfectly underſtood every thing, form'd a Plan to himſelf of the fineſt Production of which Nature was capable, and then gave Orders it ſhou'd be executed, which was done upon the Spot; for ſuch was the Extent of his Power, that all Things both animate and inanimate conform'd exactly to his Will and immediately ſubmitted to his Law. There were

were alſo Parks, Meadows, and Woods all admirably fine, and full of all ſorts of Animals, Birds, and Inſects that cou'd be deſir'd either for Uſe or Pleaſure. I ſhou'd have a great many ſtrange things to tell you, were I to enter into the Detail of every thing relating to all thoſe Animals, *&c.* For this Reaſon I ſhall only tell you what I heard moſt remarkable concerning one ſingle Species of Inſects, *viz.* The Bees.

IN this Iſland there was a multitude of Bees, and as the King's care was extended to every thing, he ſo order'd it that there were abundance of Flowers every where to nouriſh them. But in a Nook of one of the King's Flower-Gardens there was a particular ſort of Flower, which he forbad the Bees to touch: Not that thoſe Flowers were hurtful to the Bees, or that the Monarch valu'd them more than any of the other Flowers, but, as I was told, becauſe he had a mind to try their Obedience. It happen'd not long after, that ſome of the Bees forgetting the Order, or not much regarding it, went and ſuck'd thoſe Flowers. The King immediately perceiv'd it, and was ſo incens'd at it that he reſolv'd to drive all the Bees out of the Iſland, and even ſwore, ſo great was his Wrath, that he wou'd not ſpare one Bee. But ſome time after, when the Heat of his Indignation was abated, he regretted that he had paſs'd ſo ſevere a Sentence; and ſome remains of Pity for thoſe poor Bees engag'd the Monarch, who was Goodneſs and Mercy it ſelf, to find out ſome Expedient to bring them off.

THE King had an only Son whom he lov'd infinitely more than all things in the World, and it was his Pleaſure that this Son ſhou'd be the Mediator to make Peace between him and the Bees. But to the end that this Peace might be made in a manner conſiſtent with the King's Dignity, and without wounding his Honour and his Juſtice, which were concern'd to maintain the Oath that he had ſworn, there was a Neceſſity for this welbeloved Son to bear all the Pains due to the Bees, and that for this purpoſe he ſhou'd become a Bee himſelf. When this Metamorphoſis was made, the Son went in the form of a Bee to one of the worſt Hives in the whole Iſland, where he found it Labour in vain to adviſe the other Bees to be more circumſpect and more obſervant of the King's Orders, for they laugh'd him to Scorn, abus'd him, and at laſt ſtung him to Death. And what was worſe than all, at the ſame time he muſt bear the whole Weight of his Father's Wrath and Indignation, who was reſolv'd to revenge the Fault of the Bees upon him. As ſoon as this Son was dead, he return'd to his Father, and fell to interceding for the poor Bees, whoſe Debt he had paid, and for whoſe Crime he had ſuffer'd; which Mediation he ſtill continues with ſo much Succeſs, that the King has taken Compaſſion of ſeveral of thoſe Bees and forgiven them their Faults, provided they adhere ſtrictly to his Son as many intire Bee-hives have already done. It does not appear that theſe Bees ſo favour'd make more Honey, or are more at Eaſe than the others, but the Reaſon of it is (as they are taught by certain Hornets who have introduc'd themſelves

ſelves in great numbers into all thoſe Hives) that they will be more ſenſible of the Benefit that reſults to them from it after they are dead.

'TIS theſe Hornets that teach the Bees, which are inclin'd to hearken to them, all this Story, together with a multitude of Circumſtances that are not ſo much as touch'd here. And in the ſeveral Hives, both the Story and Circumſtances are ſo vary'd that ſome receive it one way, and others another, and ſome believe nothing at all of the matter. Theſe latter are threaten'd by the Hornets with very ſevere Puniſhment after Death, whereas the Bees which follow their Advice will be ſure then to receive great Rewards. When they are told, that 'tis plain that all Bees when they die, fall to the Ground and rot away either in Duſt or Dirt, they gravely anſwer that 'tis only their Bodies that periſh, but that their buzzing Part which is ſomewhat different from their Bodies, is to enjoy the Rewards or ſuffer the Puniſhments with which they have threaten'd 'em. For they make them believe that when a Bee which has follow'd the Advice of the Hornets, and given them the greateſt part of his Honey, comes to die, his Buzz goes directly to the King's Palace and contributes to fill his great Hall of Audience with Muſick, with which they ſay that Monarch is very much delighted. Whereas the buzzing Part of a Bee that acts after another manner, goes after its Death to a great Cave under Ground, where 'tis benumm'd with the Cold, and makes a very diſagreeable Noiſe by reaſon of the infinite Torture it there ſuffers. There's a prodigious number of other ſuch Chimeras, with which

these Hornets are continually filling the Heads of the poor Bees; for as they are excus'd from working and live upon the Labour of the Bees, all they have to do is to invent something to terrify the Bees and keep them in a State of Dependance, in which they have succeeded so well, that we see abundance of these poor Insects so full of Apprehension of what may happen to their buzzing Part after Death, that they cannot with Pleasure eat the Honey they have made, nor do any thing as they shou'd for the support of their Lives. And when there happen to be any Bees which in Contempt of such Chimeras apply to their Work and turn a deaf Ear to the Hornets, they incense the other Bees against them, and generally kill them, or at least turn them out of their Hives as dangerous and seditious Creatures. It often happens that when the Hornets are at Variance with one another, all the Bees of a Hive take part with one Side or other, and being animated by the Hornets they fall upon one another with so much Fury, that we generally find half of the Bees of a Hive kill'd, because they had not the same Conception of the Chimeras of the Hornets as the others had. Sometimes too those Hornets engage whole Bee-hives to make War against other Bee-hives, so that frequently we see several thousands kill'd on both Sides, only for supporting the Chimeras of the Hornets of their own Sect against those of others. The Bees also expose themselves generally very chearfully to this Slaughter, upon the Assurance given them by the Hornets of one Party as well as another, that they thereby do very great Service to the King who will take it well

well at their Hands, and admit their buzzing Part into his great Hall preferably to thoſe of many others. For they pretend to know the Orders and Will of the King much better than the other Bees, becauſe certain Hornets, ſay they, who liv'd ſeveral Ages before them, heard 'em from the King's own Lips, and tranſmitted 'em down to them, partly impreſs'd upon Wax, and partly by the Reports of their Predeceſſors. 'Tis upon this Foundation that the Hornets uſurp ſo much Authority over the Bees throughout the whole Iſland (for there are Hornets which have inſinuated themſelves into almoſt all the Hives) and extend their Tyranny ſo far as to render thoſe poor Inſects perfectly miſerable. They forbid them on certain Days to ſuck the Flowers, which they are permitted to do on others, and likewiſe prohibit their making Wax and Honey on certain other Days, becauſe, ſay they, 'tis the King's Will and Pleaſure.

AFTER he had finiſh'd his impertinent Fable, I told him, that I ſaw the End of it very plainly, but that it only prov'd how Men of Wit could turn any thing into Ridicule: I ſhew'd him that the Compariſon fail'd in almoſt every Circumſtance; particularly I obſerv'd, That tho' the eating of the Fruit of the Tree of Knowledge was forbidden to *Adam* upon a ſevere Penalty, yet when he had eaten of it, God is repreſented in Scripture as ſo far from being in Wrath, and from Swearing not to ſpare any of the Human Race (as the Fable wou'd inſinuate), that the Sentence pronounced was ſoftned with the Promiſe of a Saviour, under the Title of the *Seed of the Woman:* I told him, that the buzzing Part of the Bee does by no means anſwer to the Soul of Man: that

if Chriſtians maintain'd, that the ſpeaking Part of Man had gone to Heaven or Hell after his Deceaſe, there would have been ſome Juſtneſs in the Fable: but that the Fact (as he well knew) was quite otherwiſe. I ſhew'd him, that the Diſtinction of Soul and Body was not peculiar to the Chriſtian Religion, but common to all other Religions, and was believ'd in Countries where no Revelation had reach'd. I was going on in this Strain, but it was then too late, and it was high time to part and go to bed: and I had no other Opportunity of talking with him again on theſe important Subjects; for ſome time after, this poor Man and another carrying along a great Beam upon their Shoulders, he fell down, by which his Head was ſo bruis'd that he dy'd before he had time for Repentance, which I look'd upon as a juſt Puniſhment from Heaven, becauſe he had made ſuch an ill Uſe of his Wit and Learning.

I had been fourteen or fifteen Years at *Sercelli*, when it happen'd, one Day as I was at work in refitting a Ship, I diſcover'd a Hole towards the Middle, two Foot from the Keel: I was oblig'd in order to make my Work good and laſting, to go down into the Ship's Hold, where, as I was removing the great Flints and Gravel, which ſerve to ballaſt the Ship, I diſcover'd a Bundle bigger than my two Fiſts. The out-ſide Wrapper was a Callico Handkerchief, in which there was a Boot Hoſe of Silk, and in that Boot Hoſe, a blue Sock, in which there was a Purſe with three hundred eighty five good Guineas. My firſt Care was to conceal my Treaſure in a ſure Place, where no Body wou'd go and look for it, and notwith-

notwithstanding my Heart was full of Joy, I took great care not to make the least Discovery that I was a Penny richer than before.

ABOUT six Months after this, the *English* Consul at *Algier*, having Business at our Town, and coming with two other young Gentlemen to see if we had any Ships upon the Stocks, one of my Comrades happen'd just at that time to call out to me to lend him a helping Hand to remove a Mast he was then at work upon, when Mr. *Elliot*, who heard me call'd by the Name of *Massey*, came up to me and ask'd me *What Countryman I was*? I told him. There's a good Friend of mine, said he, a Silkman at *London*, who is your Countryman, and his Name is *John Massey*. I know very well, said I, that I left a Brother of that Name behind me, six Years younger than me, but it being now fifty Years ago, and having not heard from my Family ever since, nor they probably from me, 'tis impossible I can be certain whether that's the Man. What you now say, reply'd the Consul, makes me believe you are Brothers, for my Friend can't be less than sixty Years of Age, and he has often talk'd to me of a Brother that he very much lamented, who he suppos'd had been a long time dead. Thereupon I was forc'd to tell him in a few Words, by what Misfortune I became a Slave in *Africa*, and he made an Offer to write to my Brother, to desire him to find out some Expedient to procure my Deliverance in my old Age. I then declar'd to him in Confidence that I had Money. If so, said he, I'll find Ways and Means to set you at Liberty, but you must not make

any

any ſhew of your Subſtance; Leave every thing to my Management, and don't you meddle or make. Farewel. I kiſs'd his Hand, and recommended myſelf to his Favour.

ABOUT a Month after, my Maſter, to my very great Surprize, call'd me to him, and taking me by the Hand, ſaid, I am overjoy'd, Friend, that you are going to return to your own Country. Mr. *Elliot* has bargain'd with me for your Ranſom. Go to *Algier* and meet him. I wiſh you a good Voyage. At theſe Words I embrac'd him, and thank'd him for his Civilities, and the Regard he had always ſhewn to me from the very firſt Day of my Arrival. We both ſhed Tears at parting as if we had been Brothers. From thence I went to take Leave of my Comrades, and then ſet out for *Algier*, where the Conſul receiv'd me with extraordinary Courteſy. I told him down thirty five Guineas, which, he ſaid, he was to pay for my Liberty, but had it not been for his Credit and my Age, ſuch a trifling Sum wou'd not have ſet me free.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

Continuation of the Adventures of Peter Hudde *who is mention'd in the second Chapter; and the Author's Arrival at* London.

I STAY'D above a Month at *Algier* before I embark'd for *London*, during which it happen'd that a *Turkiſh* Pirate brought a *French* Galley into *Algier*. Mr. *Elliot* immediately obtain'd a Liſt of her Crew in order to ſee whether there was not the Name of ſome Perſon that he knew, or of ſome Countryman of his in the Number of her Slaves. He caus'd it to be read in my Preſence, and ſeem'd aſtoniſh'd to find the Name of a Man there whom he was very intimate with at *London*. I was as much ſurpriz'd at the Name of *Peter Hudde*, which he obſerv'd, and ask'd me the Reaſon. To ſatisfy his Curioſity, I gave him an Account of him, after which we went together to the Place where the Galley-Slaves were confin'd. As ſoon as we arriv'd there, we both inquir'd for our Men. His Friend had been wounded in Battle, and expir'd not above a Quarter of an Hour before we came: The other came in an Inſtant. Is your Name *Peter Hudde*? ſaid I, Yes, ſaid he; Did I never ſee you at *Lisbon*? continued I; That might be, ſaid he, but it muſt have been a great while ago then. That's true, ſaid I, for it was, if I am not miſtaken, ſo long ago as 1643 or 1644. There was one *Van Dyke* at that Time, a Factor, did you know

know him? You turn pale, but you are in no Danger here; tho' indeed it must be confess'd that you play'd him a scurvy Trick. I cannot deny it, said the Galley-Slave, I was the Man that robb'd him of the Sum of 300 Ducats; for which enormous Sin and others that I have committed, I beg God to forgive me. I have smarted sufficiently for it in this World, but I hope he will be merciful to me in the next. That's speaking like a Christian, *said I*, and 'tis a Happiness for you that Providence does you the Favour to put you upon Repentance of your Crimes. But pray tell me, why and when you were condemn'd to the Gallies? The Remembrance of it, Sir, *said he*, makes me tremble, and I wish you would excuse me from so unpleasant a Narrative which can only tend to renew my Sorrow. We commended him for the good Disposition of his Mind, and then I insisted upon my Demand, in which I was seconded by the Consul. Well then, Gentlemen, *said he*, I will satisfy you, as well to give you Proofs of my Obedience, as to acknowledge the just Punishment of my Crimes.

AFTER I had robb'd Mr. *Van Dyke*, I embark'd for *Nantes*, where by the Name of *Vander Stel*, and pretending to be Nephew to a famous Wine-Merchant at *Rotterdam*, I soon contracted an Acquaintance with all the *Dutch* Merchants there. The Caresses which I receiv'd from those honest People are inexpressible; for there was scarce a Day but I was invited to magnificent Entertainments at one or other of their Houses. During this an Intendant arriv'd from *Languedoc* who was well known to several of those Gentlemen whose Houses

Houſes I frequented. This gave me an Opportunity to ſcrape an Acquaintance with him. He was glad to ſee me, and as he delighted in Gaming he was rejoyc'd to find me in the ſame Diſpoſition. Sometimes we play'd a Game at Cheſs, and we ſpent many Afternoons at Picquet, but never ſo as to win much of either. At length as I went one Day to ſee him, I had the Happineſs to find him alone in his Room uneaſy for want of ſome Company to paſs the Time with. He call'd for the Cards, and we play'd at Ombre. He was a Dab at that Game, but I was too cunning for him. Whatever was his Deſign, 'tis certain that he encourag'd me to drink more than uſual, at which I was not a little pleas'd becauſe I imagin'd that when he had drank his Skin full of Wine, it would prevent him from diſcovering my foul Play. In ſhort, I won 50 Piſtoles of him in leſs than four Hours Time, at which he ſeem'd aſtoniſh'd, and deſir'd I would give him Revenge at Lanſquenet; which was the very Thing I wanted. However, I pretended not to underſtand that Game very well, and told him, that unleſs Fortune favour'd me as ſhe had done before, it was impoſſible but I ſhould loſe my Money and my Breeches too. Now my Adverſary began to loſe Patience. We play'd high, and tho' I let him win now and then in order to keep him in Temper, yet about Midnight when we left off, I had won above 3000 Crowns of him, which he told me down two Days after in ready Caſh. This Luck made me wonderful rich. I ſew'd 500 Ducats in a Piece of Shammy Leather of which I made a Belt and wore it under my Shirt, and then I ſet out for

Avignon,

Avignon, the Intendant going out of the Town at the ſame Time another Way. Upon the Road I hir'd a Footman, and reſum'd my old Name of *Heudde*.

MY expenſive Way of living at this new Stage made every body believe that I was a Perſon of the firſt Rank. I made no Scruple to introduce myſelf into the beſt of Companies, and they took a Pride in mine. After I had been there about a Fortnight or three Weeks, I happen'd to meet a Wench in the Street of about twenty Years of Age the fineſt Beauty I had ever ſeen in all my Life. I let her paſs me, and when ſhe was fifty Paces behind me I turn'd back and follow'd her at a Diſtance 'till ſhe went into a Houſe. Upon this I order'd my Footman to inquire privately if ſhe dwelt there, and what her Parents were. He brought me an Account of every particular, and told me that her Father was a Jew Merchant who dealt largely in Jewels. I went next Day to his Houſe on Pretence that I wanted a ſmall Diamond of 25 or 30 Piſtoles, and in order to ſettle a cloſer Correſpondence with him, I told him my Name and Country. To this I added that I knew ſeveral *Jews* at *Amſterdam*, and mention'd ſome to him whom he knew. In fine, I left no Stone unturn'd to induce him to give me Admittance to his Houſe, without ſpeaking a Word to him either of Wife or Daughter. This firſt Viſit ſucceeded ſo well that I attempted to make a ſecond. I actually bought a Ring by which the Uſurer could not get leſs than one third, but that was no great Matter. The Hopes of more conſiderable Gain tempted him to invite me often to his Houſe. I

did

did not fail to improve his Civility, and made Preparation to treat him now and then at my Quarters.

EVERY thing went ſwimmingly, but I did not ſee that it advanc'd my Deſign, ſo that I concluded I muſt take another Courſe. As I was muſing what to do, it luckily happen'd that at our very firſt Interview he was accompany'd with another *Jew*. I drew them by degrees to talk of the Difference of Religions, which engag'd us in a Diſpute. I pretended that 'till then I did not know the Force of their Arguments, and the Weakneſs of ours, with regard to the *Meſſiah*. The Hopes of making a Proſelyte, induc'd them to deſire that we might meet as often as poſſible in order to have an Opportunity to treat that matter thoroughly. Thereupon I deſir'd that I might be preſent at their public Worſhip. They open'd the Doors of their Synagogue to me with Joy, I caus'd myſelf to be inſtructed in their Religion, and at laſt being convinc'd of my Errors by the Truth of their Principles, they circumcis'd me, and I became a *Jew*. As ſoon as this was done, I was ſolemnly initiated into all their Myſteries, I ran thro' all their Ceremonies, and the Fair Sex who thought me a Saint, careſs'd and honour'd me as well as the Men. As for my part there was no Complaiſance which I did not put in Practice to them, eſpecially I carry'd it with ſuch a Reſpect to the fair Jeweſs as was not diſagreeable to her. Beſides, I often made her ſmall Preſents which ſhe receiv'd with Pleaſure, and which her Mother did not diſlike, but the Father who was covetous, tho' he had a vaſt Fortune to give

with

with this only Daughter, frown'd at this little Intercourſe of Civilities.

MEAN time, I cut a grand Figure but yet without running into Extravagance: He was ſurpriz'd at my way of Living, mad to know what Bottom I had to ſupport it, and made Inquiry every where but could not hear the leaſt Tidings. When I ſaw that, I ſent my Footman to a Friend of mine a Jew Goldſmith to buy a couple of Crucibles, and not to ſpeak a Word of it to any Body. The Jeweller it ſeems frequented that Houſe, ſo that three Days after, my Footman was perfectly ſurpriz'd, when going to my Friend the Goldſmith's Houſe, to know if he was at Leiſure to receive me, the Jeweller took him apart into a Room, treated him with a Glaſs of his beſt Wine, and talking about Crucibles, ask'd him ſlily what I meant to do with mine. My Boy, whom I had tutor'd beforehand, pretended at firſt to be ignorant of the matter in order to make him think there was ſome Myſtery in it: At laſt after a great many Queſtions on one hand, and ſwearing on the other that his Maſter would break his Neck if he reveal'd it to any Body, he told it him as a Secret that was to remain ſo for ever betwixt them two, that I made uſe of it to increaſe Gold, and that I was one of the beſt Chymiſts in *Europe*. This which he thought an ingenuous Confeſſion, and not improbable, had its deſir'd Effect. *Maſcado*, which was the Jeweller's Name, was overjoy'd he had diſcover'd this, but he did not know which way to prevail on me to truſt him with the Secret. Firſt of all he ſifted me concerning the nature of my Effects, whether they conſiſted in Money,

Money, Houſes or Land, which way I was ſupply'd with Caſh from my own Country, and then offer'd to remit me ſome for a ſmall Charge. He ask'd if I intended to travel always, whether it would not be more for my Advantage to ſettle in ſome Place or other, and the like. I anſwer'd all this in a looſe manner, which could not be very ſatisfactory to him. And when he ſaw that he could get nothing out of the Maſter, he addreſs'd himſelf a ſecond time to the Domeſtic, and by the Virtue of Promiſes and a ſmall Preſent, he made him promiſe that the firſt time I went about the Grand Work he would not fail to give him Notice.

TEN Days after this, I put my Crucibles on the Fire, and tho' I was ſtripp'd as it were to my Shirt, I was in ſuch a Heat with blowing and ſtirring that no Vermilion was redder than my Face. Mean time my Servant ran to *Maſcado*'s Houſe to inform him what was doing, on pretence that I had ſent him out to buy ſome Drams of *Aqua Regalis*, ſo that the one was ſcarce return'd but the other came to ask if I was at Home. The Maid who then happen'd to be at the Gate, came and knock'd at my Door telling my Man that ſome Body wanted to ſpeak with me, and that ſhe had told him I was in my Chamber. I pretended to be angry with her for it, and ſent out the Footman to tell him that I was not to be ſpoke with. The *Jew* made a Piſh at that, and entering bluntly into my Room, I beg your Pardon, Sir, *ſaid he*, you have been ſo retir'd ſince your Converſion that I thought you was engag'd in ſome Act of Devotion, and for fear that too much of it might

might throw you into a Fit of Melancholy and give you the Vapours, which it seems you were lately afflicted with, I took the Liberty of bolting in without being introduc'd, on purpose to chat with you for an Hour, and to invite you to spend the Evening at my House. But what are you doing here? *continued he.* Are you turn'd Chymist? What have you there in those Crucibles? Upon my Faith, I believe you are in quest of the Philosopher's Stone. Let us call another Cause, *said I*, seeming to be very much confounded: We must be doing something or other while we live in this World; and other Things I said, of which 'tis needless to give you our Dialogue. But after many Circumlocutions, and upon Condition he would not speak of it, the Conclusion was that I had the Art of multiplying Gold. To be plain with you, *said he*, I was surpriz'd to see how expensively you liv'd without any visible Way to maintain it, or speaking to any Body to help you to Money. But is your Art certain, and does it never fail? The next Time that I go to work, *said I*, you shall see an Experiment of it.

SOME Days after this I appointed a Time, and bade him bring me ten Ducats. He cast those ten Pieces of Gold into one of my Crucibles, and I threw my Powder of Multiplication into the other. Then I mix'd the whole, and stirr'd it well with a hollow Rod of Iron into which I had put Gold-Dust to the Value of fifty Livres, having stopp'd it up with a little Wax, which immediately melted, so that the Gold-Dust ran out, and augmented the Mass of Metal which he himself had thrown in. The Time fix'd for the Operation

tion being expir'd, I put into his Hands the little Ingot that reſulted from the Mixture which he carry'd immediately to his Friend the Goldſmith, who told him that it was the beſt Gold that ever came out of a Furnace. He was charm'd with the Secret, and would have perſuaded me to work at it every Day. I told him that I had already Money enough by me for my preſent Occaſions, that it was time enough for me to work when I wanted more, and that as long as I had no Houſe nor Family, I ſhould not be ſolicitous for amaſſing a great deal of Wealth; beſides, that it was very difficult to get the Powder I made uſe of, and that a Man endangers his Health by the Operation unleſs he has a great Laboratory, and all the Tools fit for a Work of ſuch Importance. You long Gentlemen, no doubt, to hear all theſe Particulars, but to cut the matter ſhort by omitting many others, which perhaps would not be diſagreeable at another Time, they did not put me under the Neceſſity of ſtarting the Affair of the Marriage, for there were certain Matchmakers that propos'd it to me themſelves. I was willing that every thing ſhould be done in form, and being ſure of my Point, I demanded the fair *Jew* of her Parents who granted her to me with Marks of entire Satisfaction, and took me immediately into their Houſe.

WE had not been marry'd long before my Father-in-law began to talk to me of the main Chance. You have a Talent, Son, *ſaid he*, which ought not to be bury'd, let us be doing while we have the Means, and get Eſtates for ourſelves and our Poſterity. I immediately gave into his Senti-

ment, and we resolv'd to erect our Laboratory at his Country-House six Miles out of Town, that we might work without being disturb'd or observ'd. But my Multiplication Powder was all spent, more must be prepar'd, and because it would take up Time, and could not be done without great Charge and Trouble, we resolv'd to make enough of it at once as should serve for a Million of Ducats. Thereupon I gave him a List of the Drugs of which the Composition was to consist, of which the greatest Ingredient was Mercury. Then I made him believe that I must have Bay-Salt, Mineral-Salt, Antimony, the Seed of Pearls, Coral, the Ashes of a Heifer, Hartshorn, and the Horn of a Unicorn, the Eyes of a Lobster, Elephants Tooth, Dragon's Blood, Eagle's Claws, Birds of Paradise, the Beaks of *American* Parrots, the Heads of Vipers, the Bones of a Camel, the Tail of a Crocodile, the Head of a Porpoise, the Rib of a Whale, all the Metals, and most of the Minerals; I told him likewise that a certain determin'd Quantity of each of these must be infus'd three Days in Sheep's Urine mix'd with one third in Proportion of the Dung of a Grey Cow, which had been steep'd in the Water of the *Rhine* the space of nine Days, which is the Square of Number 3; and the Cubic Number of that same Quantity, *viz.* 27 Days or a Periodical Month, was the Time requisite for calcinating the whole Mass, and reducing it by a slow Fire to this pretended Powder of Projection.

ALL this did not daunt the Good Man. His Hopes of great Gain made him think that easy, which another would have thought impracticable.

The

The Buſineſs was where to get the Ingredients I deſir'd. Some of them were to be had at *Avignon* and Parts adjacent, and the reſt muſt be fetch'd from *Holland*, where in ſhort there is ſomething of every Thing in the World. I afterwards gave him to underſtand, that Gold after it had once paſs'd thro' my Hands could not be multiply'd any more, and that therefore he muſt get a great Sum of Money together either by borrowing it upon Intereſt, or of ſome Friends who would be very glad to be let into a Share of the Profits. The Goldſmith being the firſt Man to whom he imparted the Secret, deſir'd him to take 500 *Louidors* of him on what Terms he pleas'd. Several others did the ſame, but all under the Roſe, and upon Oath not to reveal it to any Body whatſoever, not even to their Wives, ſo that not one Man knew any thing of what was tranſacted with another. As faſt as the Gold came in, it was carry'd to the Country-Houſe where I was often employ'd in putting Things in order.

AT laſt when I ſaw every Thing was ready, I ſaid to my Father-in-law and my Wife, that I would now go and put the laſt Hand to the Work; but that as it requir'd a great deal of Application, and as I ſhould want at leaſt three Days for it, I deſir'd 'em not to come and interrupt me in the mean while; and then ſeizing a Cabinet in which there were Jewels to the Value of at leaſt 60000 Livres, I went to the Farm, and riſing early next Morning, I took all the Money, and ſaid to the Farmer that an Affair of the laſt Importance, and which I did not think of before, calling me to *Arles*, if my Wife happen'd to come three or four Days

Days hence as she promis'd she would, I begg'd him to assure her from me that I would make as much Dispatch as I could, and mounting my Horse I bade him Farewel. As soon as I was out of the Countryman's Ken, I turn'd off another Way and rode to *Lions*.

WHEN I arriv'd at that famous Town, the Marquis *de Villeneuve* happen'd to come and sup at the Inn where I lodg'd, and wanted to be acquainted with me. I told him that I was a *Dutchman* of the Family of *Wassenaar*, and a Cornet in the Service of their High-Mightinesses, but that having had the Misfortune to fight a Duel with, and kill an Ensign of the Prince of *Orange*'s Regiment of Guards, who was of a very good Family, I had been oblig'd to fly my Country for fear of the Consequences, but that to my Comfort I did not come away empty-handed, nor without good Bills of Credit, upon which the Gentleman was extremely civil to me. I know your Family, Sir, *said he*, 'tis considerable in the *Netherlands*, and to shew you that I have an Esteem for it, if you will be at the Expence of raising a Company in a Regiment of Horse which I am going to form, it shall be your own Fault if you be not the Captain; I am going to Court, whither we will travel together, and I'll engage to make you acceptable to the King. I take you at your Word Mr. Marquis, *said I*, and pulling a Diamond of 500 Crowns off of my little Finger, which I had taken out of the Cabinet I ran away with, and at which the Colonel blink'd several times, there, *said I*, is a Present for you to bind the Bargain. Next Day I bespoke a Sute of Clothes

Clothes lac'd to the Value of a hundred Piſtoles, ſold my Horſe, got a *Valet de Chambre*, and having furniſh'd my ſelf with all Neceſſaries we took the Stage-Coach for *Paris*.

WE had not been there long, but my Patron procur'd me a Commiſſion, and preſs'd me earneſtly to loſe no time in raiſing my Company. M. *de St. John*, who was my Lieutenant, advis'd me to go with him toward *Joinville* in *Champaigne*, where he had great Acquaintance, and we might be ſure of finding Men and Horſes at a reaſonable Rate. We had been there actually ſcarce ſix Weeks when our Levies were almoſt full. But beſides the exceſſive Charge I was at in every reſpect, it was my Misfortune to be known by that Raſcal, my Footman, of *Avignon*, whom I had not paid as I ought for his Trouble, and who being of this Country happen'd to ſee me. The Knave, as well from a Principle of Revenge, as in Hopes of a handſom Reward from my Wife, immediately ſent Advice of it to *Maſcado*. This cunning Jew was ſo expeditious, and made ſuch a powerful Intereſt, that I was not only apprehended and clapp'd in Priſon ſoon after, but being accuſed and convicted of the moſt conſummate Roguery, I was ſtripp'd of all I had, and condemn'd for my Life to the Galleys.

HERE, Gentlemen, continu'd *Peter Heudde*, was the Period of my infamous courſe of Life, by which you perceive that I have been a long time in Slavery. The Pleaſures I have taſted are not equal to the Pains which I have endur'd on their Account. But the Governor of all Things wou'd have it ſo; and I bear his Chaſtiſements

with Patience, 'till he is so gracious as to put an End to them. We lamented his unhappy Fate, and Mr. *Elliot* giving him a Crown, assur'd him that he wou'd endeavour to do him Service. We wou'd fain have known where this unfortunate Person was born and his Extraction, but he wou'd not tell us, so that we retir'd in Admiration of the wise Dealings of the Almighty with his Creatures both good and bad.

I car'd so little for *Algier* while I stay'd there, and had so little Curiosity to traverse the Town, that I was surpriz'd when I was out at Sea to discover Beauties there which I cou'd not have thought of. This charming City is situate in form of an Amphitheatre upon the Declivity of a high Mountain, so that you may see it all at one View, tho' 'tis large and contains above 100000 Inhabitants. But there was no returning to view it, nor indeed did I much care for it. The Weather was agreeable, and we had so happy a Voyage that I did not feel the least Inconveniency. At length I arriv'd at *London*, that famous magnificent City (whose Lustre eclipses every thing that I had seen) the fourth of *May* 1694, in my seventy third Year, but strong and vigorous for one of my Age.

THE first thing I thought of was a new Sute of Clothes, because I was not willing to let my Friends see me in the Garb I had on then. My Landlord talk'd *French* and I desir'd him to send for a Tailor who likewise understood that Language. The Tailor came and carry'd me to a [illegible] Merchant's Shop, where, while we were viewing [illegible] cloths, there came in a Man, who, as

as soon as he had seen me, and heard that I had been a Slave in *Barbary*, was taken with a Bleeding at the Nose, which could not be staunch'd 'till he had lost above twenty Ounces of Blood. Every one try'd the Remedies he knew, but when I saw that all was to no purpose, and that they actually talk'd of sending for a Surgeon to open a Vein, I took his little Finger on that Side as the Nostril was that bleeded, and ty'd it very hard with a Needle-full of Thread between the Nail and the first Joint. This Remedy which never fail'd, tho' few Persons know how to use it, had its Effect, and was admir'd by the Company. The Merchant who knew the Man, call'd for a Glass of Brandy, and taking it out of his Maid's Hands, said, Here, Mr. *Massey*, 'tis necessary that you take some of these Spirits towards supplying what you have now lost.

THO' he was young when I went from Home, yet I presently knew him by some Features that I remember'd, besides his being very much pitted with the Small-Pox. Is your Name *Massey*? said I, Yes, said he, at your Service. Did you know, reply'd I, Mr. *Elliot* Consul at *Algier*? Intimately, said he. Very well, I reply'd, there's a Letter which he order'd me to give you. He took it, open'd and read it, and when he came to the Place where my Name was mention'd, he threw it down in a Hurry on the Compter against which he lean'd, and fell about my Neck without speaking one Word.

AS much as I labour'd at it, I was not able to pronounce a Word for a long time; we held each other about the Neck like two Statues, and I be-

lieve we ſhould have died with Joy in one another's Arms if Care had not been taken to ſeparate us. You are juſt come from Slavery, dear Brother, ſaid he, with Tears in his Eyes, and no doubt you want the good Things of this World. But Heaven has bleſs'd me for us both, come home with me for the remainder of your Life to enjoy my Plenty, and your own Liberty. 'Tis but reaſonable that you ſhould govern in your Turn. I, my Wife and Children will now be your Slaves. I would have you be Maſter at my Houſe, and I will be the firſt to obey. I was going to thank him for his Civilities, and to give him to underſtand that a Man of my Age would not be very agreeable to young People, that it would be better I ſhould be put to board with ſome Stranger, who for my Money would be oblig'd to put up with my Infirmities. But he immediately interrupted me, and having order'd the Tailor to finiſh my Clothes with all Speed, he carry'd me to his Houſe.

YET, whatever I have ſaid of my Brother is nothing in ſhort to what his Family did. I thought my Siſter his Wife, and my Nephews and Nieces his Children would have eaten me up alive for Joy. I had a very fine Apartment for my Lodging, and a domeſtic Servant always to attend me.

LE GRAND one of my Fellow Travellers having heard of my Arrival, did me the Favour to come and ſee me. He told me how, after having left *Goa*, he went to the Iſle of *Java*, where he had the Happineſs to be introduc'd into the Family of M. *de St. Martin*, and by him to M. *Van Reden* Governour of *Batavia*, and that by M. *Martin*'s

tin's Means he had an Opportunity to improve in the Mathematical Lectures I had given him, by acting in the Poſt of Engineer, which had enabled him to live genteelly the reſt of his Days. He told me alſo that *La Foret* died in thoſe Parts in very good Circumſtances, but he knew not what was become of the others.

TO do Juſtice to this Gentleman, I frankly own, that the frequent Converſation I enjoy'd with him contributed not a little towards refreſhing my Memory with a great many Circumſtances which I had almoſt utterly forgot, and that tho' this Narrative wants very much of being ſo perfect as it would have been, if I had preſerv'd my Journals, or had the Conveniency every where of putting down what occurr'd, yet without him it would not have been near ſo compleat as it is.

IF I have omitted ſome Things, I have on the other hand advanc'd nothing but what I was either a Witneſs of, or came to me from the firſt hand. And I would have publiſh'd this Account of my Travels ſome Years ago, had not ſubſtantial Reaſons prevented me, and eſpecially theſe two. 1. My Brother being concern'd in the great Farms of *France*, had ſuch ill Succeſs in them that he was forc'd to leave all, and come and ſettle in *England*, where he lives as private as poſſible, for fear the Court ſhould hear of him, and give him Trouble. The other Reaſon is of no leſs Weight, and affects myſelf in particular. I was afraid leſt my Book would excite the Ambition of ſome inſatiable Monarch to conquer the Kingdom I deſcribe; and that he would compel me to ſerve as a Guide

Guide to thoſe who ſhould be employ'd in ſo difficult an Expedition. But alas! I am weary of travelling, and too old to bear the Fatigues which I have endur'd heretofore. My Nephews are intruſted with the Care of this Manuſcript, after my Brother and I are dead, ſo that when it comes out in print the World may be aſſur'd that we are not in Being.

INDEX.

INDEX.

A.

ALGIER, its Description, *Page* 314.
Anatomy of the Human Body, 22. *&c.*
Animals, their Production, 271.
Ark of *Noah*, its Dimensions, 243.

B.

Bashaw, at *Algier*, how he was frighten'd in his Bed by a Mad-man, 278, 279, *&c.*
The Trouble our Author came into for it, who was his Keeper, 281, 282, *&c.*
Bawd and a young Whore at *Paris*, their Design upon a Counsellor of the Parliament, 144 *to* 148.
Beasts, whether they have Reason, 25.
Bees, Fable of, 292.
Beginning, in the Book of *Genesis*, the Word accounted for, 26.
Bible, the Author's prophane Account of it, 15, *&c.*
How his Mind was alter'd, 28.
Bissextile Year, why call'd so, 55.
Blasphemy against God reckon'd the most enormous Crime, 94.
Bleeding, an infallible Remedy to staunch it, 315.
Bodies, human; how liable to change, 45.
Brasil Women, how their Husbands lie in for 'em, 17.
Bustrol the King of this strange Country; his Character, Dress, Children and Wives, Palace, Revenues, Coin, *&c.* 127 *to* 132, 136.
Ridiculous Account of the Origin of his Ancestors, and the Methods taken to enforce the Belief of it, 135, 150, 151.
His way of travelling, 168.
His Marriage to a Woman that was to have been the Wife of a Carpenter, 169.
His other Marriages, 170.

C.

Calendar, its Origin and Correction, 54, 55.
Cantons, a particular Description of them, 83. 99.

Christ,

Christ, what Notion they have of him in those Parts, 95, 96.
How his Miracles are to be understood, 267.
Christian Religion, some Account of it, 141, *&c.*
Chronologies of the World, various, 110, *&c.*
Clock-making, the Author and his Comrades Genius for it, 91.
How they were employ'd in it by the King of the Country, 127, 137.
The Honours paid them for their Ingenuity, 161.
Cock-fighting, and Eagle catching two yearly Ceremonies, 78, 79.
Creation, gross Accounts of it, 106, 107, 123.
Crimes how punish'd in this unknown Country, 94.
Why they put no Criminals to Death, 92, 93.
Cubit in the Scripture, what it was, 243, 244.

D.

Days and Hours how measur'd in this strange Country before the Invention of Clocks, 91, *&c.*
Days thought to be all alike, 99.
Deluge, whether Universal or only Partial, 241, *&c.* to 245.
Descartes's Works, Reflections on them, 6, 7.

E.

Eagle-baiting, a yearly Ceremony, 79.
Earth, its Motions describ'd, 53, 54. 137.
Earth, its Motion further illustrated, 162 *to* 165.
Earthquake and a Tempest describ'd, 235.
Eclipses defin'd, 58, 59.
Empress, which of the King's Wives has that Name, 153.
Her Delivery of a Son, and the Ceremonies on that Occasion, 152, 153, *&c.*

F.

Father's remarkable Quarrel with his Son, and the Decision of it, 157 *to* 160.
Funerals, an Account of them, 167.

G.

Galileo, his Sufferings from the Court of Inquisition, 7.
Gall-nut, a Description of that Fruit, 272.
Glass, the Want of it how supply'd, 130.

INDEX.

Goa City, its Description and Inhabitants, 251. 254.
How our Author was frighten'd in his Bed at one of the Inns, 252, *&c.*
His Practice there in Surgery, 254.
His Imprisonment in the Inquisition, 255.
His Discourse with a *Chinese* Prisoner about Religion, 256, *&c.*
His Defence before the Inquisition, and Condemnation to the Galleys for Life, 273, 274.
How he was taken by a Pirate, and carry'd to *Algiers*, 276.
His Redemption from Slavery, 300.
Goats large and strong us'd for Draught, 82.
Story of an unruly one, 88.
GOD, by what Name he is call'd in this unknown Country, 93.
Their Opinion of the Divine Being, 98. 118, 119.

H.

Hair, long, a Dissertation upon it, and why our Author consented to have his cut off, 29, 30.
Heat and Cold, what they consist in, 59. 61.
Heaven, a crude Notion of it, 114.
Heudde, Peter, how he bit *Vandyke* a *Dutch* Factor at *Lisbon*, 32, *&c.* 302.
How he was afterwards taken by the Pirates, 283.
How he pretended to make Gold, 306 *to* 309.
His own Narrative of his Rogueries, 301 *to* 313.

I.

Immortality of the Soul ridicul'd, 116, *&c.*
Incarnation of *Christ*, that Mystery freely treated of, 265, 266.

L.

Language of the unknown Country, 75 *to* 78.
Light, its Creation defin'd, 26, 107.
Lisbon City describ'd, 14.

M.

Marriages at what Age they are allow'd in this unknown Country, and to whom prohibited, 153, 167.
Massey, John, a Mercer at *London*, our Author's Brother and their Caresses at Meeting there, 315.
Massey, David, Captain of a Ship his Misfortune, 2.

Matter,

Matter, its Operation on our Organs, 60.
Microscopes, the Use of 'em, 269, 270.
Mines of Iron and Coal describ'd, 85, 86.
Miracles of our Saviour how to be understood, 266, 267.

N.

Negro, Story of one who hang'd himself for fear of banging, 19.
The Dissection of his Body, 20.
Why *Negroes* are black, 21.
Nests of strange Birds describ'd, 44, 45.
News, the Method of spreading it through this unknown Country, 155.

O.

Oak-Apples describ'd, 272.

P.

Paris, the Author's Account of it, 4.
Pascal, M. an Account of his Conic Sections, 5.
Perception, what is the sole Cause of it, 24.
Philosophy, natural, a curious Discourse on it, 236 *to* 240.
Pillar of Fire that conducted the *Israelites*, what it was, 105.
Pole, a strange Animal of that Name describ'd, 131.
Polybius, a Quotation from him with respect to the Gods, and to Rewards and Punishments, 264.
Polygamy, to whom allow'd, 128.
Prayer reckon'd needless, 99. 101.
The Necessity of it, 101. 103.
Princes why they don't love Alterations in Worship, 96.
Purgatory, an Account of it, 141.

R.

Religious Differences not so essential as pretended, 264, 265.
Resurrection, the Pagan Notion of it, 107, 108, *&c.* 113. 116.
Revelation Divine vindicated, 103, 104, *&c.*
Revelation Divine defended by our Author against a Christian Renegadoe, 284, 285, 286.

S.

Savages, our Author and his Comrades encounter with them, 226, *&c.* to 230.

Scriptures, Holy, whether they were all inſpir'd, 286, 287.
Their Antiquity and Authenticity, 287, 288 *to* 290.
Serpent, a hideous one like to have devour'd our Author, *&c.* 50.
Small-Pox, its Fatality, 170.
Spaniard's ſcuffle with a *Portugueſe* in which they murder'd each other, 250, 251.
Sun, how worthy he is thought of Adoration, 52, 53.
Computation of his Dimenſions, 57, 58. 162.
Sun-Dialling, an Account of that Art, 171.

T.

Temperance, the good Effects of it, 31, 32.
Thought defin'd, 24.
Time internal and external, how defin'd and meaſur'd, 26, 27.
Tortoiſes, the Excellency of their Fat, 39.
Touch, the Effects of it, 24, 25.
Trinity, a Diſcourſe on that Subject betwixt a *Chineſe* Pagan and a *French* Jeſuit, 258, 259.
Compared to a Fruit-Tree, 259, 260.
The Infidelity of the *Chineſe*, 261.

V.

Virgin, what it means in the Original, 266.

W.

Wandering *Jews*, an Account of him, 8, *&c.*
Wars, juſt, vindicated, 139, 140.
Watch, a Preſent of one made to the King by our Author's Comrade, 172.
How it involv'd him in a very dangerous Intrigue with one of the King's Wives, 173 *to* 200.
Woolpack at Sea deſcrib'd, 36, *&c.*

Y.

Year, the Variety of its Computations, 54, 55.
The Difference betwixt the *Gregorian* and *Julian*, 56.

FINIS.